

MUSLIM CONDUCT OF STATE

BEING A TREATISE OF MUSLIM PUBLIC INTERNATIONAL LAW,
CONSISTING OF THE LAWS OF PEACE, WAR AND
NEUTRALITY, TOGETHER WITH PRECEDENTS
FROM ORTHODOX PRACTICE, AND
PRECEDED BY A HISTORICAL AND
GENERAL INTRODUCTION

by

MUHAMMAD HAMĪDULLĀH
(*of the Faculty of Law, Osmania University*)
Hyderabad-Deccan



Sh. MUHAMMAD ASHRAF
KASHMIRI BAZAR - LAHORE (INDIA)

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

[Born at Hyderabad-Deccan, 16th Muharram 1326 H./19th February 1908 ; studied at Hyderabad-Deccan, Bonn am Rhein and at the Sorbonne ; visited libraries of Hijaz, Syria, Lebanon, Palestine, Egypt, Turkey, Germany, Holland, England, France, Afghanistan, Morocco, Tunis, Algeria, and India for the preparation of this thesis].

1. (In Arabic) : الوثائق السياسية في العهد النبوى و الخلافة : الراشدة, Cairo, 1360 H./1941.
 2. (In Hindustāni) : قانون بين الممالك في اصول اور نظيرى Hyderabad-Deccan, 2nd ed. 1364 H./1945.
 3. Die Neutralität im islamischen Völkerrecht, Bonn and Leipzig, 1935.
 4. La Diplomatie musulmane à l'époque du Prophète et des Khalifes Orthodoxes, 2 Vols., Paris, 1935.
 5. Les Champs de bataille au temps du Prophète, Paris, 1939.
 - 5-a (Do. enlarged Hindustāni edition) : عهد نبوى في ميدان جنگ with 8 maps and 34 illustrations, Hyderabad-Deccan, 3rd ed. 1364 H./1945.
 6. Some Inscriptions of Madīnah of the Early Years of Hijrah, Hyderabad-Deccan, 1939.
 7. (In Hindustāni) : امام ابو حنيفه کی تدوين قانون اسلامى Hyderabad-Deccan, 1361 H./1942.
- ETC., and a number of articles in various periodicals.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	... xi
PART I.—INTRODUCTORY	
CHAPTER I. Definition and Nature	... 1
II. Early Terminology	... 7
III. Subjects of Muslim International Law...	11
IV. The Object and Aim of International Law	... 13
V. Its Sanction	... 14
VI. Its Roots and Sources	... 15
1. The Qur'ān	... 15
2. The Sunnah	... 18
3. Orthodox Practice	... 20
4. Practice of Ordinary Muslim Rulers	... 21
5. Opinions of Jurists	... 21
(a) Ijmā'	... 21
(b) Qiyās	... 23
(i) Modern European Authors	26
(ii) Modern Muslim Writers	... 28
6. Awards of Arbitrators and Referees	... 30
7. Treaties	... 31
8. Official Instructions	... 32
9. Internal Legislation and Unilateral Declarations	... 32
10. Custom and Usage	... 32
Retrospect	... 36

	PAGE
CHAPTER VII. The Place of International Law in Law	
General	... 37
VIII. The Contribution of Islam to the Internationalising of Human Society	... 39
(a) Brotherhood of Man	... 41
(b) Hajj or Pilgrimage to Ka'bah	42
(c) <u>Khilāfat</u>	... 43
IX. The History of International Law before Islam	... 46
Pre-Islamic Arabia	... 50
X. Place of Islam in the History of General International Law	... 60
XI. The Ethical Basis of Muslim Law	... 66

PART II.—PEACE.

CHAPTER I. Preliminary Survey	... 68
II. Independence	... 68
State	... 73
Intervention	... 77
III. Property	... 80
Boundaries	... 82
Open Sea	... 83
Modes of Acquiring Territory	... 87
Various Kinds of Territories under Power of a State	... 90
(a) Regular Parts of Dominions and Condominiums	... 91
(b) Tributary Independent States	91
(c) Nominally Dependent	... 92
(d) Protected States	... 94
(e) Sphere of Influence	... 95
Neutralisation and No-Man's Land	... 96

	PAGE
CHAPTER IV. Jurisdiction	... 97
Things	... 97
Persons	... 98
(a) Muslim Subjects at Home	... 98
(b) Non-Muslim Subjects at Home	... 99
Naturalisation	... 103
(c) Muslims in Foreign Territories	104
(d) Citizens of one Muslim State in another	... 115
(e) Muslim Citizens of a Non-Muslim State	... 117
(f) Resident Aliens in Muslim Territory	... 117
Extraordinary Cases in Jurisdiction	... 122
1. Head of the State	... 122
2. Envoys and Ambassadors	... 127
3. International Judges and Arbitrators	... 127
4. Public Armed Forces	... 127
(i) Muslim Army	... 127
(ii) Enemy Army	... 128
5. Neutralised Land and No-Man's Land	... 129
6. Special Privileges, Capitulations and Ex-territoriality	... 129
7. Extradition	... 131
V. Equality of Status	... 133
VI. Diplomacy	... 134
Reception of Envoys	... 137
Privileges of Envoys	... 139
Peaceful Settlement of International Differences	... 140

PART III.—HOSTILE RELATIONS

CHAPTER I. Preliminary Remarks	...	146
II. Various Kinds of Hostile Relations	...	147
1. Reprisals	...	147
2. Pacific Blockade	...	148
3. Miscellanea	...	148
III. Nature and Definition of War	...	149
IV. Lawful Wars	...	153
1. The Continuation of an Existing War	...	153
2. Defensive	...	154
3. Sympathetic	...	155
4. Punitive	...	156
5. Idealistic	...	156
V. Enemy Persons	...	160
VI. Apostasy	...	161
Treatment of an Apostate	...	162
Distinction between Territory of Apostates and Territory of Ordinary Non-Muslims	...	163
VII. Civil Wars and Rebellions	...	165
(a) Various Kinds of Opposition	...	166
1. Religious Grounds	...	166
2. Political or Worldly Reasons :		
Insurrection, Mutiny, War of Deliverance, Rebellion, Civil War		167
(b) Treatment of Rebels, etc.	...	168
(c) Belligerent Rights of Rebels	...	170
(d) Special Privileges of Rights	...	171
(e) Miscellanea	...	173
(f) Deposition of Muslim Ruler	...	174
(g) Non-Muslim Rebels	...	175

	PAGE
CHAPTER VIII. International Highwaymen and Pirates	177
IX. War with Non-Muslim Foreigners ...	180
X. Declaration of War ...	181
XI. Effects of Declaration of War ...	184
1. General Effects ...	184
2. Effects on Commercial Relations ...	185
3. Effects on Trusts and Debts ...	187
4. Effects on Treaties ...	189
XII. Treatment of Enemy Persons ...	192
1. Enemy Resident Aliens ...	192
2. Enemy at Home ...	193
3. Enemy in the War Zone ...	193
XIII. Acts Forbidden ...	195
XIV. Giving Quarter ...	200
XV. Treatment of Prisoners of War ...	204
1. Muslim Prisoners ...	204
2. Enemy Prisoners captured by Muslims ...	205
(a) Beheading of Prisoners ...	208
(b) Enslavement ...	209
(c) Ransom ...	211
(d) Exchange of Prisoners ...	212
(e) Gratuitous Release ...	212
XVI. Choice given to Inhabitants of Annexed Territory ...	214
XVII. Acts Permitted ...	215
XVIII. Spies ...	222
XIX. Uniforms ...	224
XX. Flags of Truce ...	226
XXI. Enemy Property ...	227
1. State Property ...	229
2. Private Property ...	236

	PAGE
3. Distribution of Booty ...	237
(i) <i>Tanfil</i> ...	240
(ii) <i>Salab</i> ...	240
(iii) <i>Şafiy</i> ...	241
4. Postliminium or Return of Things and Persons captured by Enemy ...	242
CHAPTER XXII. Women in Muslim Army ...	244
XXIII. Treatment of the Dead ...	246
XXIV. Non-Hostile Intercourse with Bel- ligerents ...	247
1. Parley ...	247
2. Exchange of Prisoners ...	248
3. Permission for Travel, Transporta- tion of Goods and Licences to Trade ...	249
4. Contraband of Trade ...	251
5. Truce and Armistice ...	254
XXV. End of War ...	257
Nature of the Treaty of Peace ...	259
Effects of a Treaty of Peace ...	261
Elements of Treaty ...	261
Ratification of Treaties ...	262
Interpretation of Treaties ...	263
Amendment of Treaties ...	263
Denunciation of Treaties ...	264
Hostages and Pledge ...	264
The Classical Treaty of Hudaibiyah...	265
XXVI. Miscellanea ...	271
1. Neutral and National Ambulance Service ...	271
2. Army-Court ...	271
3. Religious Service in time of Danger	273

	PAGE
4. When and Why the Muslims Should Agree to make Peace ...	273
5. Effects of International and Mis- taken Inter-Muslim Homicide ...	273
6. Debts due to a Defeated Enemy ...	274a

PART IV.—NEUTRALITY.

CHAPTER I. Introductory ...	276
II. Technical Term for Neutrality ...	277
III. Teachings of Qur'ān on Neutrality ...	283
IV. Cases and Treaties of Neutrality in the Time of the Prophet and the Ortho- dox Caliphs ...	286
1. Cases ...	286
2. Treaties ...	287
V. Laws of Neutrality According to Jurists	294

APPENDICES.

APPENDIX A. Instructions to Commanders ...	298
1. By the Prophet ...	298
(a) General ...	298
(b) To 'Abdar-Raḥmān-ibn-'Awf	299
2. By Abū-Bakr ...	300
(c) To Usāmah ...	300
(d) To Yazīd-ibn-Abī-Sufyān ...	301
3. By 'Umar ...	302
4. By Abbasid Caliphs ...	303
(a) To the Commander of the Land Forces ...	303
(b) To the Commander of Sea Forces ...	306

	PAGE
APPENDIX B. Bibliography	... 309
1. (a) Arabic MSS.	... 309
(b) Printed Works in Oriental	
Languages	... 312
Arabic	... 312
Hindustānī	... 315
Persian	... 316
Turkish	... 316
2. Works in European Languages	... 317
3. Works on History of International Law in Non-Muslim Lands	... 326
INDEX	... 231

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

PREFACE TO THE NEW EDITION

It is always flattering to an author to see his work requiring a new edition or translation. The first edition and its reprint were brought out during the war, and the new one is suffering from the aftermath. Some of the needs of the western international law for change, after the strain of the global war, may be met by bringing into relief the picture of another system of international law which had served the requirements of another world culture, Islam, during its heyday, when it ruled supreme from the Atlantic to the Pacific. There is a renaissance at present throughout the Muslim world, and Indian Islam is certainly not the least concerned with the revival of its culture and the restoration of its heritage, material as well as spiritual. I do not pretend that my humble effort will satisfy all that officials of the foreign and military departments of a modern Islamic State may require in this particular branch. It is not a blue print, it is a draft sketch. In this revised edition there are several corrections and improvements to the extent that war and my own limitations have allowed, and other workers in the field would remedy my shortcomings.

I am thankful to Messrs. Shaikh Muhammad Ashraf of Lahore for including this work in their series. Theirs has now become a national institution and not merely a commercial concern. In spite of thousands of miles of distance which separate us, they have kindly allowed me to read one of the proofs; and if still mistakes lurk, the fault is not theirs.

The work has had considerable circulation in England

and the United States, in spite of war conditions, and has been included in the curricula of several Indian universities. The new edition may meet the requirements of the wider circle of the peace time literary world. And I take the opportunity of expressing my heartfelt gratitude to our grand old man of law in Hyderabad, Nawāb Dr. Sir Amīn Jung Bahādur, to whose generous help I owe several of the corrections and improvements in the present edition.

وآخر دعوانا أن الحمد لله رب العالمين

Osmania University,
Hyderabad-Deccan, India,
 Muḥarram 1365 H./1945

M. H.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

THERE was no *international* law in Europe before 1856.

What passed as such was admittedly a mere public *law of Christian nations*. It was in 1856 that for the first time a non-Christian nation, Turkey, was considered fit to benefit from the European Public Law of Nations, and this was the true beginning of internationalising the public law of Christian nations. That, however, does not mean that international law, with its modern connotation, was born then and there ; it already existed elsewhere. For, Islam had recognised that all states, irrespective of religion or race, have similar rights and obligations. Unlike any other nation of antiquity, the public law of nations evolved by Muslims was *not* meant to regulate the conduct of a Muslim state with regard to Muslim states alone, excluding all the non-Muslim world.

Even as a separate and independent science, " international law " owes its origin to Arab Muslims of the Umayyad period, who divorced it from political science and law general, though not displacing it from its ethical basis.

With the loss of their empires, average Muslims have forgotten their rich cultural heritage. Over a decade ago, when I began writing these pages, I had not the slightest idea that, to write on Muslim international law meant describing the very first phase of this science after it became a self-contained and independent branch of learning. Nor was I aware at that time that any modern work existed on the subject or was even under preparation.

At the instance of the League of Nations and with

the warm support of the Head of the Law Faculty of the Osmania University, Public International Law was introduced in the Osmania LL.B. curriculum as a compulsory subject, and I happened to be in the first batch of students after this decision. It struck me at once that what was taught us as international law was identical in many respects with the teachings of the books of *Fiqh* and Muslim History. When I talked this over with our learned Professor and Head of the Faculty, Ḥusain 'Alī Mirzā, he encouraged me in the idea of writing an article, perhaps to be read in the Law Students' Union.

The bulk of the article, however, daily increased, and in the following year I was permitted to take the same theme for subject as a post-M. A. research scholar. After exhausting the material available in the libraries of Hyderabad, I was allowed to proceed abroad to study in the libraries of Ḥijāz, Syria, Palestine, Egypt and Turkey. And finally I was permitted kindly by the Osmania University, for which I was preparing the thesis, to proceed to Bonn and submit the same thesis there for a doctorate. This I did in August 1933 after completing only two terms (9 months) in that University. There I selected only the last part of the work, dealing with neutrality, to print and get the degree. My further studies on an allied subject, Early Muslim Diplomacy, for a doctorate of the University of Paris, together with researches in the manuscript libraries of Europe and North Africa, increased my data.

I am not yet satisfied with what I have jotted down, and it is with great diffidence that I venture to publish these few pages.

I take this opportunity of expressing my deep sense of gratitude to the professors under whom I worked or from whom I have profited in the preparation of this monograph:

Prof. 'Abdul-Wāsi', Head of the Department of Fiqh, Osmania University,

Prof. Sher 'Alī, Head of the Department of Kalām and Muslim Philosophy, Osmania University,

Prof. Muḥammad 'Abdul-Qadīr Ṣiddīqī, Head of the Faculty of Theology, Osmania University,

Prof. Ḥusain 'Alī Mirzā, Head of the Faculty of Law, Osmania University,

Prof. Mīr Siyādat 'Alī Khān of the Law Faculty, Osmania University.

These five savants, the first two of whom have since departed this life, were originally appointed to guide me in my researches. Again :

Prof. Paul Khale, Director of Oriental Seminar, Bonn,

Prof. Sālim Fritz Krenkow of the Oriental Seminar, Bonn,

Prof. Thoma, Director of the Institute of International Law and Politics, Bonn,

Prof. Snouck-Hurgronje of Leiden.

Prof. Gaudefroy-Demombynes of the Sorbonne, Paris,

Prof. Louis Massignon of the Collège de France, Paris,

Prof. William Marçais of the Collège de France, Paris.

And I ever remember what I learned from them with gratitude.

Hyderabad-Dn.
1941.

M. H.

MUSLIM CONDUCT OF STATE

*Being a treatise of Muslim Public International Law,
consisting of the laws of war, peace and neutrality together
with precedents from Orthodox Practice.*

PART I

INTRODUCTORY

CHAPTER I

Definition and Nature

AS has aptly been said :

“ When stable communities—whether Tribes, or City-States, or States of a modern type—are permanently contiguous, customs hardening in time into law never fail to regulate their intercourse. *Ubi societas, ibi jus* ; wherever developed communities are brought in contact with each other, juridical relations must sooner or later be formed not mainly by agreement, tacit or express, but by the very necessity of the case, and partly from the same causes as those which working internally create States.” (John Macdonell in the Introductory Note to C. Phillipson’s *International Law and Custom of Ancient Greece and Rome*).

In other words, International Law means rules of the conduct of States in their mutual dealings. Obviously, it is not necessary that there should be only one set of rules, or one system of international law, at a time, for the conduct of all the states of the world. And several systems of international law could, and in fact did, exist simultaneously in different parts of the globe. Even the modern, so-called European, International Law is not a collection of unanimously approved rules.

Islam has elaborated its own system of public international law. Before describing it in detail, it might be useful to define precisely what I mean by the term *Muslim International Law*.

Muslim International Law may be defined as : That part of the law and custom of the land and treaty obligations

which a Muslim *de facto* or *de jure* State observes in its dealings with other *de facto* or *de jure* States.

A few words of explanation may not be out of place.

We have emphasised the point that what a Muslim State accepts as such is the Muslim International Law. This must be borne in mind from the very outset. Muslim International Law depends wholly and solely upon the will of the Muslim State. It derives its authority just as any other Muslim law of the land. Even the obligations imposed by bilateral or multilateral (international) treaties have the same basis; and unless they are ratified and executed by the contracting Muslim party, they are not binding; and their non-observance does not create any liability against the Muslim State. Of course it does not matter whether the acceptance is express or tacit.¹ It may be added that the promulgation and execution of International Law with the consent of all the States of the world is an ideal which has never been achieved, even for a short term, in the long annals of Man.

We have, however, recognised in our definition that not only laws and customs of the land, but even treaties, impose obligations upon a Muslim State. Treaties will be dealt with later, but what is *law*?

Law (*Fiqh*) is variously defined by classical Muslim jurisconsults. "The Knowledge of what is *for* and *upon* one" (معرفة النفس مالها و ما عليها) is a definition attributed to Abū-Ḥanīfah,² which in other words may be rendered as 'the science of the rights and obligations of man.' A late authority, Muḥibbullāh al-Bihārīy, introduces this all-embracing subject in the following words³ of his book (compiled 1109 H.):—

The science of ascertaining religious commands (regarding practical affairs of life) by means of their detailed

¹ See further, *infra*, Sources of Muslim Law, Effect of Treaties, etc.

² شرح التوضيح لمقتضى التوضيح by Ṣadrush-Sharī'ah, p. 9.

³ مسلم الثبوت, p. 5.

guides.

(By *guides* he means authority or source of information).

A glance at the contents of works on *Fiqh* would reveal that they embrace practically all the affairs of human life, material as well as spiritual. In view of the standard definitions given above and in the face of the contents of works on *Fiqh*, there remains not the slightest doubt that international law, i.e., the rules of state-conduct in times of war, peace and neutrality, form part of the ordinary law of the land, the *Fiqh*. These rules of conduct are generally dealt with in books on *Fiqh* under the heading *Siyar* (سير), i.e., *conduct*, as we shall show in the next chapter.

Here a brief exposé of the origin of law according to Muslim jurists might profitably be added. They¹ say that man must always do what is *good*, and abstain from what is *evil*, and take scrupulous care of the intermediary grades of *plausible*, *permissible* and *disliked* (‘مكروه’ ‘مباح’ ‘مستحب’). It is, however, not easy to distinguish between *good* and *evil*, especially when the matter concerns the subtleties of a complex civilised life beyond the pale of ordinary commonplace things. Practical needs would have required the possession of the power to legislate,—(or, lay down definitely grades of good and evil of each and every matter) in the hands of Man, either individual, as jurisconsult, or collectively organised, i.e., a State. Yet mere reason, regarded as the touchstone of good and evil, is not without grave difficulties. For it is possible, and also a matter of fact—so argue Muslim jurists—that different persons opine differently regarding the same things. The belief in Messengers of God is useful even from the point of view of jurisprudence, in so far as the awe and respect due to their persons lead to the acceptance of certain

¹ E.g., توضيح التلويح by at-Taftāzānīy, pp. 173-96 and any book on Muslim Jurisprudence (اصول الفقه) ch. *Ḥusn wa Qubḥ*. Again, Osttorog, *Angora Reform*, ch. Roots of Law; D.B. Macdonald, *Development of Muslim Theology, Jurisprudence and Constitutional Theory* (New York), p. 73 et seq.

fundamentals without further dispute, wherefrom other and further details may be elaborated. For this reason the Muslim savants are very thankful to the generosity of God that He gave men, along with *reason*, certain chosen *human Guides* to help them in the conduct of life. These selected and chosen ones pointed out what God commanded, God the real Sovereign and Lawgiver, regarding good and evil. Muḥammad has been acknowledged by the Muslims as the Messenger of God, and whatever he gave them in his lifetime, commands as well as injunctions, in the name of his Sender, God, was accepted by the Muslims as undisputably final and most reasonable. These Divine Commands, known as the Qur'ān and the ḥadīth—as we shall see later in detail—served practically all the needs of the Muslim community of that time. But human needs multiplied later in such a manner that no express provision seemed to be available in either the word or the deed of the Messenger, who himself had passed away, disconnecting the link whereby Man could receive Commands from his Lord. The consequent result would have been fatal and the fabric of *Fiqh* would soon have collapsed under the strain, had not there been express provisions in the law itself for further elaboration. Credit must also not fail to be given to the Muslim jurists, after the death of the Prophet, who not only discerned this elasticity of the Divine Law, but also utilised it to its fullest extent. In time there emerged a complete system of law which served all the purposes of the Imperial Muslims, even at the height of their widest expansion from the Atlantic to the Pacific Oceans.

Thus law originated from the direct Commands of God; but the power retained by man to interpret and expand Divine Commands, by means of analogical deductions, and other processes, provided all that was required by the Muslims. In this way a dual need was served: that of sanctity to inspire awe in the minds of those who were intended to observe it, and that of elasticity or capability of development to meet the needs of times and circumstances.

We have defined international law, first, as a part of the law of the land. The province of the law of the land is therefore, obviously, wider than that of international law; and we have no concern here with the portion of the law of the land which regulates internal affairs of the State or its subjects.

We have also acknowledged *custom* as contributing to international law. No system of law can positively provide guidance regarding every detail of every matter. Completion of a list of obligatory and prohibited things, along with details of a certain number of permitted matters,—that is all any system of law can achieve. Naturally the prevalent customs (عرف), general practice (عادة), and even innovations hardening in time into usage (عموم البلوى) regulate the relations in such cases. We shall discuss this further in the chapter on Sources of Muslim Law.

Besides the laws and customs of the land, treaties between two or more states create obligations. This distinct kind of addition to the fabric of the law is tolerated, for shorter, or longer periods, in the interests of the State. The classical Treaty of Hudaibiyah provides us with a precedent of terms even improper in themselves being capable of acceptance with a broader view of the ultimate good of the community.

Further, the distinction between a *de jure* and a *de facto* state is necessary, first because sometimes special institutions or happenings (for instance a powerful rebellion) although not acknowledged as States *de jure* are yet States *de facto*. It is possible in special cases that a certain state does not simultaneously possess both the attributes of being *de jure* as well as *de facto*. Secondly, the aim of this distinction is to point out that we are concerned with foreign states as such, and not with foreigners resident in Muslim territory regarding their private affairs, *e.g.*, inheritance, nationality and the like. These belong to Private International Law or the Conflict of Laws as it is also called. In this connection, too, it might be recollected that the Private Interna-

tional Law of Islam¹ is also a part of *Fiqh*, and derives its authority not from any foreign source but from the sovereign will of the Muslim State itself.

In our definition the words "dealings with other . . . States" have a special significance. We intend thereby to convey the idea that Muslim International Law is only that which is observed by a state which acknowledges Muslim law as the law of its land in its dealings with other states. These other states may be Muslim or non-Muslim. We are not concerned with the laws and usages of non-Muslim States, except in so far as the Muslim residents there are concerned, or in so far as those laws and usages have been accepted by the Muslim State to act upon in its international intercourse.

It may be added that, for purposes of illustration, precedents from Orthodox Practice have freely been referred to. Abnormal and temporary abuse or overlooking of certain rules by a certain state cannot render such rules null and void.

¹ On Muslim Private International Law, see the recent monograph, *La Conception et la Pratique du Droit International Privé dans l' Islam*, étude juridique et historique, par Choucri Cardahi (Recueil des Cours, 1937, II, pp. 510-650, Académie de Droit International, The Hague).

CHAPTER II

Early Terminology

ALTHOUGH the pre-Islamic Arabs had their own international usages, yet they could not have elaborated them into a system. When Islam came and founded a *State* of its own, the earliest name given by Muslim writers to the special branch of law dealing with war, peace and neutrality seems to have been *Siyar* (سير), the plural form of *Sirat* (سيرة), meaning conduct and behaviour. A few quotations will support my contention :—

(a) Ibn-Hishām (d. 218 H.) (سيرة رسول الله, p. 992) :

ثم امر بلالاً أن يدفع إليه اللواء فدفعه إليه . فحمد الله و
صلى على نفسه . ثم قال : خذ يا ابن عوف ، اغزوا جميعاً في
سبيل الله فقاتلوا من كفر بالله . ولا تغلوا ولا تغدروا ولا تمثلوا
ولا تقتلوا وليداً ولا امرأة . فهذا عهد الله و سيرة نبيه فيكم .

I.e. : Then the Prophet ordered Bilāl to hand over the banner to him. He did so. Then the Prophet eulogised God and asked for His mercy upon himself, then said : O son of 'Awf ! Take it. Fight ye all in the path of God and combat those who do not believe in God. Yet never commit breach of trust nor treachery nor mutilate anybody nor kill any minor or woman. This is the pact of God and the *behaviour of His Messenger* for your guidance.

(b) Ibn-Habīb (d. 245 H.) in his كتاب المحابر, p. 265 :

وكانوا يصنعون فيها ويسيرون فيها بسيرة الملوك بدومة الجندل

I.e. : They used to give public feasts there and *behaved there according to the behaviour of the kings* of Dūmatul-Jandal.

(c) Ibn Sa'd (d. 230 H.) (in his طبقات vol. 1/2, pp. 32-33) :
 و لهم على جند المسلمين الشركة في الغني والعدل في الحكم
 والقصد في السيرة ، حكم لا تبديل له في الغريقتين كليهما .

I.e. : The Muslim army shall concede to them a share in the booty, adroitness in government and moderation in *behaviour*. This is a decision which neither of the contracting parties may change.

These few citations show that the conduct of the ruler, not only in time of war but also in peace, was referred to by the term *sīrat* as early as the time of the Prophet and even in pre-Islamic times. This is according to authors of early in the third century of Hijrah. The term was adopted for " International Law " at least a century earlier. Thus Abū-Ḥanīfah (d. 150 H.) is known so far to be the first¹ to designate with the term *siyar* the set of special lectures he delivered on the Muslim Laws of War and Peace. These lectures were edited and ameliorated by several of his pupils of which كتاب السير الصغير and كتاب السير الكبير of ash-Shaibānīy (d. 189 H.) have, in one form or other, come down to us. A contemporary of Abū-Ḥanīfah, the Syrian Imām al-Awzā'iy (d. 157 H.) criticised the opinions of the 'Irāqī Imām, Abū-Ḥanīfah. Al-Awzā'iy's monograph has not come down to us, but a rejoinder to it by Abū-Yūsuf (d. 192 H.), the famous pupil of Abū-Ḥanīfah, with the title, الرد على سير الاوزاعي has recently been edited. Ash-Shāfi'iy (born 150 H.) also refers to this *Siyar* of al-Awzā'iy in his works (cf. كتاب الامر, vol. vii, pp. 303-336), as also to the *Siyar* of al-Wāqidīy (d. 207 H.). Henceforward the word seems to have become a technical term commonly used by jurists of

¹ Cf. Editor's note in الرد على سيرا لا وزاعي by Abū-Yūsuf, recently published. Zaid-ibn-'Alīy (d. 120 H.) has used the same term in his compendium of *fiqh* المجموع ; and if the work really originated from him, the priority must go to him.

all times. A typical passage of as-Sarakhsīy (d. 483 H.) will show what he understood by this term, and in fact what Islamic books of international law contained :—

اعلم أن السير جمع سيرة - وبه سُمي هذا الكتاب لأنه
بيّن فيه سيرة المسلمين في المعاملة مع المشركين من أهل
الحرب ومع أهل العهد منهم من المستأمنين وأهل الذمة ومع
المرتدين الذين هم أخبث الكفار بالانكار بعد الاقرار ومع أهل
البغى الذين حالهم دون حال المشركين وإن كانوا جاهلين و
في التأويل مبطلين -

"Know that the word *Siyar* is the plural form of *Sirat*. We have designated this chapter by it since it describes the *behaviour of the Muslims* in dealing with the Associators (non-Muslims) from among the belligerents as well as those of them who have made a pact (with Muslims) [and live as Resident Aliens or non-Muslim Subjects]; in dealing with Apostates who are the worst of the infidels, since they abjure after acknowledgment (of Islam); and in dealing with Rebels whose position is less (reprehensible) than that of the Associators, although they be ignorant and in their contention on false ground."¹

It must, however, be pointed out that the term *Sirat* was used by historians to designate the life of the Prophet. The analogy has been brought into relief by different authors. Raḍiyud-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy, for instance, states in his chapter on International Law: "The word *Sirat*, when used without adjectives, meant the conduct of the Prophet more especially in his wars. And for this the Prophet has said: 'Every prophet had some profession (for livelihood), and my profession is *Jihād*; and in fact my means of subsistence are placed under the shadow of my

¹ المبسوط by as-Sarakhsīy, Vol. X, p. 2.

spear.'¹ In other words, the term *sīrat*² which linguistically signified conduct in general, acquired later the restricted sense of the conduct of the Prophet in his wars, and later still the conduct of Muslim rulers in general in international affairs.

¹ المكيط by Raḍiyud-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy, Vol. I, fol. 567a, b (MS. Waliuiddīn, Istanbul, No. 1356) :

في عرف الشرع متى اطلق يراد به طريقة رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في مغازيه على الخصوص ولهذا قال عليه الصلاة والسلام : لكل نبي حرفة وحرقتي الجهاد وانما رزقي تحت ظل رمحي -

² For a philological discussion of the term see also the glossary of my الوثائق السياسية على عهد النبي والخلافة الراشدة (Cairo, 1940-1.)

CHAPTER III

Subjects of Muslim International Law

BY subject (موضوع), Muslim jurists understand a thing the essential appurtenances (عوارض ذاتية) of which are under discussion.¹ By subjects of international law, we understand the categories of people regarding whose cases this part of the law is applied. They comprise :

Firstly, every Independent State which has some relation or other with other states.

Secondly, Part-Sovereign States which possess at least a limited right to foreign relations.

Thirdly, Belligerent Rebels who have acquired resisting power (منعة) and a territory over which they exercise the ordinary functions of a state.

Fourthly, Highwaymen and Pirates.

Fifthly, Resident Aliens in Islamic territory.

Sixthly, Muslim Citizens residing in foreign countries.

Seventhly, Apostates.

Eighthly, Privileged non-Muslims (أهل الذمة) or the Dhimmis, that is, non-Muslim Subjects of a Muslim State as distinguished from ordinary Resident Aliens.

Obviously, with some of these relations both pacific as well as hostile are possible. While with others only one of these is possible. For instance, rebellion is possible only with hostile relations as far as the mother country is concerned. And as soon as a peace is concluded between the rebels and their mother country, they are either recognised as an independent state—and not mere rebels—or are reduced to the position of obedient citizens of the state,

¹ شرح التوضيح, p. 21.

regarding whom international law is no more applicable. As far as states other than the mother country of the rebels are concerned, the rebel ones enjoy the same status as ordinary states, yet the very recognition of rebellion and concession of belligerent rights signifies a state of war between the rebels and their country. However, we shall deal with it in detail in a subsequent chapter.

CHAPTER IV

The Object and Aim of International Law

ALTHOUGH Islam regards the life of this world as only a transitory stage, a period in which to till the soil for reaping in the Hereafter,—hence the assertion of al-Bihārīy¹ that the object of the knowledge of Muslim law is well-being in the eternal next world,—yet unlike many other religions, Islam does not recommend renunciation of the world, but rather enjoying to the full the blessings of temporal life. The Qur'ān says :—

There are some men who say, O Lord, give us good in this world ; but such shall have no portion in the next world. And there are others who say O, Lord, give us *good in this world and also good in the next world*, and deliver us from the torment of the Fire. They shall have a portion of that which they have gained : God is swift in taking an account.²

And again :

But seek the abode of the Hereafter in that which God hath given thee and *neglect not thy portion of this world*, and be thou kind even as God hath been kind to thee, and seek not corruption in the earth. Lo ! God loveth not corrupters.³

It goes without saying that the whole fabric of Muslim law was constructed for guiding the Faithful in regulating their life in this world. Whatever its ultimate object, its temporal and mundane aim is the ability to lead one's life in the fairest possible way. *Mutatis mutandis*, Muslim International Law would aim at the justest possible conduct of the Muslim ruler in his international intercourse.

¹ *مسلم الثبوت*, p. 10.

² Qur'ān, 2 : 200-02.

³ *Idem*, 28 : 77.

CHAPTER V

Its Sanction

TO a certain extent the sanction of Muslim International Law is the same as that of the ordinary Muslim law of the land. It is especially so as regards the relations of foreign residents with the state in which they reside. The government, through its judicial tribunals, administers justice to those to whom wrong is done. As is known, the real sanction of Muslim law is not the organised will of the sovereign (who, being human, may enjoin tyranny), but the belief in the after-life and judgment by God. Spiritual and conscientious inducing and deterring factors are more effective than temporal persuasions and prohibitions. For thus one abides by the law, not only under coercion, but even when there is none to oppose one's will, except, perhaps, the fear of retaliation or scandal and disrepute.

CHAPTER VI

Its Roots and Sources

BY "sources" of a science we mean here the places where its rules are first to be found. Writers on Muslim Jurisprudence have always used the expressive term "Roots" (أصول) from which rules shoot for this purpose. We do not mean the beginning of these rules clad in all authority required to give them binding power. Otherwise the only possible source of international law would be the acceptance of a rule by a government to use in international relations. We shall consider in this connection the following :—

1. The Qur'ān.
2. The *Sunnah* or the traditions of the Prophet.
3. The Orthodox Practice of the early Caliphs.
4. The Practice of other Muslim rulers not repudiated by the jurisconsults.
5. The Opinions of celebrated Muslim jurists :
 - (a) consensus of opinion (إجماع),
 - (b) individual opinions (قياس).
6. The Arbitral Awards.
7. The Treaties.
8. The Official Instructions to commanders, admirals, ambassadors and other state officials.
9. The Internal Legislation for conduct regarding foreigners and foreign relations.
10. The Custom and Usage.

1. *The Qur'ān.*

The Qur'ān is admitted by the Muslims as the Word of God and therefore the basis of all their law. It is in

fact a collection of Divine Revelations—more precisely, the selected compilation of the so-called “recited revelation” (وحي متلو)¹ reaching Muḥammad through the agency of the angel Gabriel. The Qur’ān was not revealed as a whole, but came down in fragments, as necessity arose, during the prophetic career of Muḥammad, which lasted for about twenty-three years. Whenever a portion of the Qur’ān was revealed to him, he used to order one of his amanuenses to take it down. It was also he who prescribed and pointed out the place or places to which the verse or verses properly belonged:² the verses of the Qur’ān were not compiled in chronological order. Obviously they were not written in the time of the Prophet in book form, but on stray leaves of paper, shoulder blades, date leaves, and other handy material.³ It is further admitted that when some revealed verses were cancelled, naturally on the authority of the Prophet alone, they were omitted and obliterated.⁴ As a rule, the Companions of the Prophet used to commit to memory as much of the revealed verses as they wished or were able to remember, and also made written copies for themselves. Even as early as the first years of Muḥammad’s prophethood, there were extant in Mecca private copies of

¹ According to the Qur’ān (cf. 53 : 3-4) whatever the Prophet uttered was based on divine revelation, yet not all that he uttered was ordered by him to be recited in religious services. Hence the distinction between recited and unrecited revelations.

² *Musnad* of Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 69; again, at-Tirmidhīy, an-Nasā’iy, etc., as quoted by *Kanzul-‘Ummāl*, Vol I, No. 4778.

³ *Kanzul-‘Ummāl* (I, 4759) quoting al-Bukhārīy, at-Tirmidhīy, an-Nasā’iy, Ibn-Sa’d and others.

⁴ Cf. Ibn-Hishām, pp. 1014-15; *Kashful-Asrār* of ‘Abdul-‘Azīz al-Bukhārīy (Comment. of Pazdawīy), Vol. III, p. 188:

وقال الحسن رحمه الله : ان النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم اوتي
 قرآنا ثم نسيه فلم يكن شيئا أولم يبق منه شيء لما رفع الله
 تعالى عن قلبه ذلك (و كان هذا جائزا في القرآن في حياة النبي
 عليه السلام) -

portions of the then revealed Qur'ān.¹ This continued up to the very death of the Prophet, when besides the above-mentioned documentary material, there were at least four persons who had committed the whole Qur'ān to memory.² The number of those who committed the whole 114 chapters of the Qur'ān to memory (the *ḥāfiẓes*) increased rapidly,³ as this brought worldly gain, public honour and official dignities.⁴ The *ḥāfiẓes* (reciters from memory) and *qārīs* (reciters reading artistically) up to this day give certificates to their pupils recording that they had heard the Qur'ān in the very order of verses and chapters, and also the chant and intonation, which they transmitted to their pupils, from their teachers, and they from their teachers,—all named,—linking the chain back to the Prophet himself.

The first successor of the Prophet, the Caliph Abū-Bakr, in spite of his all too short term of office (about two years only), arranged that a fair copy of the whole text of the Qur'ān should be made in the form of a book (*muṣṣhaf*); the order of the verses was to remain as prescribed by the Prophet. The commission entrusted with the work required two authentic written copies⁵ of the fragment dealt with, besides having to tally with what was memorised by the *ḥāfiẓes*. The task was duly brought to a successful end; only regarding one or perhaps two small passages no more than one written evidence was found.⁶

This unique copy of the official edition remained with the Caliph; later his successor, the Caliph 'Umar, used it, after whose murder, it was in the custody of his

¹ Ibn Hishām (سيرة رسول الله), p. 226.—Ibn Sa'd, 3/1, p. 192.

² Ibn Sa'd, 2/1, pp. 112-13; Bukhārī, ch. Faḍā'ilul-Qur'ān, § Qur'ā'.

³ Alone in one detachment of Caliph 'Umar, they numbered once three hundred (cf. *Kanzul-'Ummāl*, I, 4030).

⁴ E.g., cf. *Kanzul-'Ummāl*, I, 4030, on the authority of Ibn Zanjueh.

⁵ Ibn Sa'd, quoted by *Kanzul-'Ummāl*, I, 4764. Cf. Bukhārī, ch. Faḍā'ilul-Qur'ān, § Jam'ul-Qur'ān.

⁶ Bukhārī, *ibidem*, also 93 : 37, 75 : 33 (3); Ibn Sa'd, quoted by *Kanzul-'Ummāl*, I, 4772, 4801, 4802.

daughter,¹ Ḥaṣṣah, the widow of the Prophet. It was in the time of the third Caliph, 'Uṭhmān, that difficulties began to arise in the provinces. The Caliph, therefore, ordered seven copies to be made from the official edition prepared for the first Caliph, and these copies were sent to different provincial capitals of the Empire, the original being returned to Ḥaṣṣah. The Caliph 'Uṭhmān gave orders that even the spelling² of the official copies must be followed, and that all those private copies that were found to differ from the official edition had to be collected and destroyed.³ What we now possess is the publication of the Caliph 'Uṭhmān just referred to.

Bibliography: Prof. Mufti 'Abdul-Laṭīf, تاریخ القرآن.—Aslam Jairājpūrī, تاریخ القرآن.—Nawāb 'Alīy, تاریخ مصحف سماوی.—Nöldeke-Schwally, *Geschichte des Qorans*, 2 vols. (The work has been continued by Bergsträsser and Pretzl).—Goldzieher, *Richtungen der Qoranlesung*.

2. *The Sunnah.*

The second source of Muslim International Law, in order as well as importance, is the *Sunnah* or the *ḥadīth* which comprises what the Prophet said, did, or tolerated. In quantity, the rules of Muslim International Law found in the traditions of the Prophet far surpass those in the Qur'ān. In quality, the *ḥadīth* is considered inferior to the Qur'ān, yet this seems to be in view of the difficulty of proving the genuineness of a tradition. Otherwise the Qur'ān itself has expressly and unequivocally put the word of the Prophet on a par with the Qur'ān,⁴ on the basis that what the Messenger uttered on behalf of the Sender is taken as the Sender's word.

¹ Bukhārīy, 66 : 3, 93 : 37.

² Qaṣṭallānīy, عمدة القارى شرح صحيح البخارى, I, 406.

³ Bukhārīy, 66 : 3.—Kanzul-'Ummāl, I, 4799.

⁴ Cf. Qur'ān, 53 : 3-4, 33 : 21, 59 : 7, etc.

The compilation of the traditions of the Prophet was begun in his own lifetime by his Companions, this besides many official documents, such as treaties, instructions to tax-collectors, letters, charters, census reports¹ and the like.² The thousands of traditions taken down by the Companions, and still more orally transmitted to their pupils (who, or their pupils, wrote them down), have an interesting history of their own. Modern scholars believed for long that the compilation of ḥadīth in written form began two hundred years after the Prophet's death. Many contemporary Muslim savants showed the baselessness of this allegation, such as al-Kattānīy, Shibli, Sulaimān Nadwī, and only recently Prof. Manāẓir Aḥsan of the Osmania University, in an exhaustive manner, after which it is not necessary for me to discuss the subject any further except to remind my readers that the material on the life of the Prophet is to be found not merely in books on ḥadīth.

Bibliography: نظام الحكومة النبوية المسمى التراتيب الادارية والعمالات والصناعات والمتاجر والحالة العلمية التي كانت على عهد تأسيس المدينة الاسلامية في المدينة المنورة عليه .

Vol. I, pp. 114-238 (في العمليات الكتابية وما يشبهها وما يضاف إليها);

Vol. II, pp. 168-446 (في تشخيص الحالة العلمية على العهد النبوي).

—Shibli, سيرت النبي, Vol. I, Introduction.—Sulaimān Nadwī, خطبات مدراس (i.e., *Madras Lectures*), 2nd ed., lecture 3 (also published in the monthly *Ma'ārif*, A'zamgarh, India, February 1926 and translated into English by the *Islamic Review*, Woking, England, sometime later. —Manāẓir Aḥsan, تدوين حديث in the *Research Journal of the Osmania University* (مجموعة بحوثات علمية),

¹ Bukhārīy, 56 : 181, No. 1.

² Cf. الوثائق السياسية, and also my *Corpus des Traités et Lettres diplomatiques de l'Islam*. The first collection dates from the time of the Companions.

Vol. VII.—For the written documents of early times see also M. Ḥamīdullāh, *Documents sur la Diplomatie Musulmane à l'époque du Prophète et des Khalifes Orthodoxes*, (Paris, 1935), Vol. 2, *Corpus des Traités et Lettres diplomatiques de l'Islam*.—*Idem*, الوثائق السياسية على العهد النبوى والخلافة الراشدة (Cairo, 1940), comprising only the Arabic texts with many additions to the French *Corpus*.—al-Khaṭīb al-Baghdādī, *تقييد العلم* (MS. Berlin).

3. *Orthodox Practice.*

Just as the practice of the Prophet, so also that of his successors has attracted a variety of authors. It is to be found in books of *ḥadīth*, of history, of biography, of case-law, of anthologies and other publications. No special and exclusive collections were ever made of the practice of either the Prophet or his Caliphs regarding international intercourse. Even if attempts have been made, they are not exhaustive.

It goes without saying that the precedents of the time of the Orthodox Caliphs may be accepted in addition to the traditions of the Prophet and not against them. It may, however, be observed that if a practice of the Orthodox Caliph is proved beyond dispute, and it goes against some tradition of the Prophet, there will be strong reason to presume that the Orthodox Caliphs, who knew *ḥadīth* more thoroughly than any of the later jurists, acted on the authority of some other tradition of the Prophet, abrogating the one against which the practice in question is to be weighed. This is only theoretically possible, for I know no such concrete case.

In Muslim jurisprudence, the Companions of the Prophet, though never considered as infallible as the Prophet, enjoy considerable veneration. Their piety and their devotion to their Leader could never have induced them to violate deliberately the prescriptions of the Prophet; and if one, ignorant of the law, acted in some way contrary to it, others would at once have corrected him. This, however,

does not exclude the difference of opinion between them regarding matters for which there was no provision in the *Sunnah* of the Prophet. In such cases preference is given according to the personal eminence of the conflicting authorities, the opinion of any of the first four Caliphs, for instance, prevailing over the opinion of other Companions.

4. *Practice of Ordinary Muslim Rulers.*

The practice of the Orthodox Caliphs has legal authority. Not so the practice of other and later Muslim rulers. Still it might be useful to refer to it at times, especially when their practice has not been repudiated by the contemporary or later jurisconsults. Some of the Umayyads and Abbasids, Salāḥuddīn the Great (Saladin), Awrangzeb in India and many other Muslim rulers have left many a useful precedent the importance of which cannot be ignored.

The records of this, too, must be sought in a variety of sources. Its reliability must depend upon the reliability of the individual source. It must, however, not be overlooked that this category of authority for rules of international law is accepted on the condition that it does not contravene the Qur'ān or the *Sunnah* or Orthodox Practice.

5. *Opinion of Jurists.*

From the very beginning Muslim writers on jurisprudence have divided *opinion* into two kinds of unequal importance, the *Ijmā'* (consensus) and *Qiyās* (individual analogical deduction).

(a) *Ijmā'*.

Various sayings of the Prophet are cited to bless this consensus of opinion, as for instance :

(i) My people will never be unanimous in error.
(لا يجتمع أمتي على الضلالة)

(ii) The hand of God is over the collectivity, and whoever quits it, is sent to hell. يدالله على الجماعة فمن شذ' شذ'
في النار (الترمذی)

(iii) What Muslims agree to be good is also good in the sight of God. *مأراة المسلمون حسناً فهو عند الله حسن*
 And many more to the same effect. Even verses of the Qur'ān are quoted to support the same.

According to Islamic jurisprudence, whenever unanimity is reached among the Muslim jurists of a time, this consensus has the same validity as "a verse of the Qur'ān or the most reliably proved tradition of the Prophet; and whoever denies its authority is to be considered an infidel."¹ The authors, however, agree in theory that a later consensus may abrogate a former.²

In spite of the importance of *Ijmā'*, it is curious that no institution of a permanent character was devised to ascertain it. Records abound that the Prophet always consulted³ his Companions in legal as well as political matters. Again, the Caliph 'Umar seems to have found, in the pilgrimage to Mecca, an easy and convenient annual institution to consult the governors of his wide-stretched empire, to hold a general and all-empire appeal session of the supreme court, to meet deputations from far off parts of the realm, etc. For a generation or two after the Prophet, it seemed that the ascertainment of the best and most expedient opinion of the country was considered to be a government business. Soon, however, civil wars and schisms ensued, and the rulers contented themselves with the opinions of the official jurisconsults, the *personæ gratæ* among them, and general consultation fell in desuetude. The consequent result was that private students and scholars of law cultivated the science, and the question of *Ijmā'* became a mere fiction, since there are no means of collating the data except private research into an imponderable and ever-increasing literature. Again, there are no sanctions to declare individual authors worthy of submitting their opinion for the decision

¹ كشف الاسرار على اصول البيروني للبخاري, Vol. III, p. 261.

² *Idem*, p. 262.

³ Cf. the Qur'ānic commands thereto, 3 : 159, 42 : 38, 47 : 21, etc.

of a case by a consensus, and obviously not every ordinary member of the Muslim community all over the world, now numbering by hundreds of millions, can have a say in any such matter.

Bibliography: كشف الأسرار على أصول الپزدوى لعبد العزيز with text of and commentary on Pazdawīy's work, Ch. اجماع, Vol. II, pp. 226-266.—توضيح التلويح by at-Taftāzānīy, *in loco*.—الرساله by ash-Shāfi'īy, p. 65. Any and every book on Muslim jurisprudence (أصول الفقه), *in loco*.

(b) *Qiyās*.

Individual opinion of jurists and political scientists has had a very subtle division, according to its nature, in Muslim jurisprudence. Analogy, deduction, equity, *responsa prudentium*, judicial decisions, other opinions of individual authorities as expressed in their books or otherwise known—all have different technical names and different grades of precedence. I need not enter into a detailed discussion of them. I would rather classify the literature wholly or partly dealing with Muslim International Law. The more important classes are the following :

- (i) Works on *Siyar* or international law proper.
- (ii) Works on *Fiqh* or compendia of law (*corpus juris*).
- (iii) Works on *Fatāwī* and *aqḍiyah* or collections of judicial decisions, case-law, *responsa prudentium* and the like.
- (iv) Works on political science, sociology and allied subjects.
- (v) Works on administrative and public law.
- (vi) Works on *Naṣā'ih al-mulūk* or text-books for princes in the art of government and rulership.
- (vii) Works on general or particular history, biography, political poetry and allied subjects.
- (viii) Works on tactics and strategy.

(ix) Proceedings of Conferences.

(x) Modern works on Muslim International Law.

I need not discuss in detail each class of these works. A selection of the more important of them will be given in the bibliography, at the end of this monograph. However, I may mention that works on *Maghāzī* (battles of the time of the Prophet) have expressly been omitted from this classification, as they, as well as biographies in general of the Prophet, properly belong to the second source, *i.e.*, *Sunnah*, discussed above.

During my studies, I have come to the conclusion that, although there is no dearth of works on political science and practical advice to princes in any civilisation of yore, which incidentally deal also with rules of international intercourse—books of Aristotle, Kautiliya's *Artha Sāstra*, political writings of Confucius, etc., illustrate the point—yet I found no trace of the divorce of international law from political science or law in general before the Arabs. As has been already mentioned, Abū-Ḥanīfah seems to have been first in the field and the *siyar* literature formed an independent branch of legal science. Books on law, even before Abū-Ḥanīfah, have been referred to, which we shall discuss presently; but no monograph on international law (*siyar*) has to my knowledge been attributed to any jurist before Abū-Ḥanīfah (d. 150 H.).

It is perhaps not unnatural that every nation seems to pay attention first to legal literature. Codes or compendia of law seem to have come into existence in Islam in the very first century of Hijrah. In any case the *كتاب المجموع* (or the *corpus [juris]*) attributed to Zaid-ibn-'Alīy (d. 122 H.) has come down to us¹ and contains chapters on

¹ Published under the title: *Kitāb al-Majmū'*, corpus juris di Zaid ibn Ali (VIII S. Chr.) la più antica raccolta di legislazione e di giurisprudenza musulmana finora ritrovata, testo arabo publ... per la prima volta sui mss. *iemenic* della Bibliotheca Ambrosiana,... da E. Griffini, Milano 1919. (Brockelmann mentions in his G.A.L. a *fiqh-hadīth* work, of the kind of *Muwatta'*, by al-'Āmirīy (d. 120 H.). But according to *تاریخ بغداد* of

siyar or international law. So also the *Muwatṭā'* (الموطأ) of Mālik (d. 179 H.) has special chapters on our subject. Thenceforward, practically no Islamic *corpus juris* was devoid of chapters on international law, entitled variously *siyar*, *maghāzī* and *jihād*.

The same is true of works entitled *Fatāwī* or collections of cases, judicial decisions and *responsa prudentium*. One of the earliest of them is attributed to the Caliph 'Alīy, compiled by some of his pupils, though it has not come down to us. Originally such works came into existence either as collections of judicial decisions of individual judges,—one such is attributed to Ibn-Rushd also—or compilations of the replies of private juriconsults. In later times, even compendia of law were given this name. The Mughal Emperor Awrangzeb 'Ālamgīr of India appointed a committee to codify Muslim law, and the result of their labour is known as *Fatāwī 'Ālamgīriyah*,¹ and is still looked upon as great authority.

I may also refer in this connection to learned bodies and academies. Collective deliberations have naturally a greater chance of arriving at the proximity of reason and truth than individual labours. Islamic history has recorded, even in classical times, associations of savants, and they have had a very great influence over Muslim thought. I shall not discuss the famous *Ikhwān aṣ-Ṣafā*, which, to me, was more of a philosophical concern than juristic. I cannot, however, proceed without referring to the Law Academy founded by Abū-Ḥanīfah, which, though not as yet thoroughly studied, had very great influence on the codification and systematisation of Muslim law. It is said² that there were forty members of it, all legists yet each having

al-Khatīb, he died in fact in 159 H. Being a senior contemporary of Mālik, he may have compiled first, yet his work has not come down to us.

¹ Sometimes also known as *Fatāwī Hindīyah*.

² جامع مسانيد الامام الاعظم لابی المؤيد محمد بن محمود الخوارزمي
امام ابوحنيفه. Vol. II, 179. سيرة النعمان مولفه شبلى. Vol. I, 32-33.
كى تدوين قانون اسلامى مولفه حميدالله.

special qualifications. Some were philologists, others logicians, still others historians of orthodox times, to elucidate the precedents and their background, and so on.

This leads me to international Muslim conferences. I do not know of any instance in classical times of conferences for international law or even purely for law. Yet many social evils are traced to certain laws and conventions, and hence even social and political conferences should not be neglected in this connection. For instance, the usurious habits and transactions of *banyās* in India and Jews elsewhere in ancient times could not be without effect on Muslims, to whom both giving and taking of interest is religiously forbidden, yet unless provision is made in the country for lending money without interest there is much to prevent Muslims in need of money for emergency purposes from falling into the evil of at least giving interest on loans. Thus, a conference of Muslim savants and leaders of all over the world met in Madinah in 973 H., and discussed the problems, political as well as social and moral, affecting the Muslims of those days, and resolved how to deal with them. The minutes and proceedings of this important conference were published by one of the delegates, as-Saiyid Abul-Fath *alias* Shaikh 'Abd al-Mun'im al-Baghdādiy, under the title *Mukhtār al-Kawnain*. Unfortunately there is no trace of the complete work now; only a part of it exists in a private library in India. The original text is not yet edited, but a Hindustani translation was printed some years ago under the title *مدینه کانفرنس* which has been analysed and reviewed in *Islamic Culture*, January, 1941.

A few words about modern authors.

As with many other subjects of Arabic literature, the interest of non-Muslim Europeans in Islamic laws of war and peace has preceded the determination of modern Muslim scholars to deal with the subject. These are a few of the more important books or articles by European authors:

- (i) H. Reland, *Instituts du droit Musulman relative à la*

guerre, trad. du latin par Ch. Solvet, 1838.

(ii) *Institutions du droit Mahométan sur la guerre avec les Infidèles, trad. de l'arabe par Ch. Solvet.*

(iii) Haneberg, *Das muslimische Kriebsrecht* (in : *Abhandlungen der philoso.-philolog. Bayrisch. Akademie der Wissenschaft, 1869*).

(iv) E. Nys, *Le droit des gens dans les rapports des Arabes et des Byzantins* (in : *Revue du droit international et législation comparée, 1896, Bruxelles, pp. 461-87*).

(v) C. Huart, *Le Droit de guerre* (in : *Revue du Monde Musulman, Paris, 1907, pp. 331-46*).

(vi) *Idem, Le Khalifat et la guerre sainte* (in : *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions, 1915, pp. 288-302*).

(vii) E. Fagnan, *Le Djihad selon l'école malekite* (Algiers, 1908).

(viii) Th. W. Juynboll, *Handbuch des islamischen Gesetzes* (1910, Leiden-Leipzig), *in loco*.

(ix) F. F. Schmidt, *Die Occupatio im islamischen Recht* (in : *Der Islam, 1910, pp. 300-353*).

(x) Polemics during the Great War of 1914-18; the following may be noted :

(a) Snouck-Hurgronje, *Heilige Oorlog Made in Germany* (in : *De Gids, January 1915*).

(b) C. H. Becker, *Deutschland und der heilige Krieg* (in : *Internationale Monatschrift, 1915, Sp. 631-662*).

(c) Snouck-Hurgronje, *Deutschland und der heilige Krieg, Erwiderung* (in the same, Sp. 1025-1034).

(d) C. H. Becker, *Schlusswort* (in the same, Sp. 1033-1042).

(e) F. Schwally, *Der heilige Krieg des Islam in religionsgeschichtlicher und staatsrechtlicher Bedeutung* (in the same, 1916, Sp. 678-714).

(xi) Hatschek, *Der Musta'min ein Beitrag zum internationalen Privat- und Völkerrecht des islamischen Gesetzes*, Berlin, 1919.

(xii) W. Heffening, *Das islamische Fremdenrecht, 1925*.

Further, there is a vast literature on Khilāfat in Russian, German, Italian, French, English, etc. A useful resumé of it was published in the *Revue du Monde Musulman* (now published under the name: *Revue des Etudes Islamique*, Paris) of 1925.

We must also not neglect the various books on the history of modern international law in which the contribution of Islam has been discussed and described. For instance, Walker, in his *A History of the Law of Nations* (vol. I, Cambridge, 1899), Bordwell, *Law of War between Belligerents*, (Chicago, 1908), Nys, *Etudes de droit international public et de droit politique*, and also in his *Les Origines du droit international* (Paris, 1894), Holtzendorff, *Handbuch des Völkerrechts* (1885, in the first of the four vols.) and others.

As for Muslim writers, the need was felt, so far as I know, as early as the nineties of the last century. Writing a history of international law in general, Ibrāhīm Ḥaqqī of Istanbul deplores the non-existence of works on Muslim International Law. In a characteristic passage, after discussing the contribution of Islam in about a dozen pages, he says :—

” افادات معروضه دن مقصد عاجزانه ام انسانیت، مدار مفخرت اوله، جق هر خصوصده فوق العاده ترقی ایدن ملل اسلامی، نک قرون وسطی ده غریبونه، هر و جهله، فائق اولدیغنی و بناء علیه، مدنیتی بوقدر ایلرولمش ملتکرب بین الملل معاملاتده رعایتی مقتضی اولان قواعد جه جهل تام اوزره بولملری و بوبابده تدقیقات و تالیقاتده بولملری محال بولندیغنی گوسترمکدر، فقط نه چاره که حکمای اسلامی، نک آثارندن بر چوقی اهل صلیب و قاتارل معرفتیه، مکو و منعدم اولمش و بر قسمیده کتبخانه گوشه لرنده مستور قالمش اولغله، بوخصوصده بیان معلومات وسع عاجزانه مک فوقنده اولوب بو یولده آثاری بالتعری قدمای اسلامک حقوق بین الدول خصوصنده دخی غریبونه، رجحکانی اثبات ایتمک علمای کرام حضراتنه، عاید بر وظیفه، مقدس در۔“

(تاریخ حقوق بین الدول ص ۳۷-۳۸ مولفی ابراہیم حقى
مکتب ملکیہ شاہانہ ماڈولر لندن، استانبول قرہ بت و قصاب
مطبعہ سی سنہ ۱۳۰۳) -

That is:

"By these few notes, my humble purpose is to point out that the Muslim peoples have been the pride of humanity. They made extraordinary progress in every walk of life, and surpassed the Westerners in every respect during the Middle Ages. Therefore, they cannot have completely ignored this important branch of civilized life, namely, the rules of international intercourse, and cannot but have made researches into and written works on this subject. Yet what is to be done? The achievements of the great Muslim authors have partly been destroyed by the People of the Cross and by the Tartars, and partly lie hidden in the corners of libraries. Consequently, it is above my capacity to give details in this respect. And, it is a sacred duty of the *ulama* to conduct researches and prove the superiority of classical Muslim authors even in respect of international law."

A co-citizen of this author of ours, Aḥmad Rashīd, cherishes the same notions even in 1937, and asserts:

"En effet, aucun livre n'a paru jusqu'à présent qui exposât, dans leur ensemble, les vues de l'Islam en ce qui concerne le droit des gens."¹

Still Mr. Aḥmad Rashīd has not shirked the task of taking responsibility on his own shoulder as best as he could, hence his lectures in the Academy of International Law of The Hague. I have, however, come to know of the following monographs on the subject before the Hague lectures just referred to:

(i) Negib Armanāzī, of Damascus, *L'Islam et le droit international*, thesis, Paris, 1929.

¹ *L'Islam et le droit des gens*, par Ahmed Rechid (in : Recueil des Cours, Académie de droit international, The Hague, 1937, II, p. 378).

(ii) The same, Arabic edition with certain additions, *الشرع الدولي في الاسلام*, نجيب الارمنازى, Damascus, 1930.

(iii) Saba, *L'Islam et la Nationalité*, thesis, Paris, 1933 (with acknowledgement to the bibliography of Cardahi; but I could not identify the nationality of the author).

(iv) M. Chaigān of Teherān, *Essai sur l'histoire du droit public*, thesis, Paris, 1934.

(v) *Die Neutralität im islamischen Völkerrecht*, by the writer of these lines, thesis, Bonn a/R, 1933, (published 1935).

(vi) Abul-A'lā Maudūdī of Delhi, *الجهاد في الاسلام* comprising articles originally contributed to the Hindustani bi-weekly *al-Jam'iyat* of Delhi, published in the series of Dārul-Muṣannifin, A'ẓamgarh, 1348 H.

(vii) Aḥmad Rashīd, just referred to above, 1937.

(viii) The present monograph, begun in 1929, submitted in 1933, revised and published first in 1941.

Other monographs, of even earlier date, on modern expositions of *Jihād* will be mentioned in our general bibliography in an appendix. 'Abdurrahīm, in his *Principles of Muhammadan Jurisprudence* (Calcutta, 1911, cf. Ch. XII), has some penetrating remarks on the subject. But he has not yet found time to devote on some special monograph on the subject.

6. *Awards of Arbitrators and Referees.*

By arbitration, mediation, reference and similar terms we understand the fact that two parties to a conflict agree to abide by the opinion of a third and impartial person. There are cases of this kind not only in internal but also in international conflicts. The difference between these various terms will be seen later. It will suffice if we mention here that such awards have always been held as useful precedents, and generally have been referred to when similar cases arose. The more so when in such awards there are set forth the principles on which the opinion of the arbiter was based.

7. *Treaties.*

Another important source of international law comprises treaties. Sometimes they are bilateral and sometimes multilateral, and obviously they bind only the parties thereto. We shall deal with them in detail later, but it may be pointed out here that there are no precedents in Islamic history of all the states of the world¹ adhering to a treaty, and the reason is not far to seek. Communications and economic interdependence, as also restrictions on foreigners, were not so far developed in those days.

In connection with treaties, it must be recognized once for all, that there are certain rules in Muslim law which are imperatively compulsory and for ever (تعبدى وتابدى). These cannot lose their binding force except when, and so long as, one is in extreme stress and unavoidable necessity (اضطرار). "Except one who is driven by necessity, neither craving nor transgressing, it is no sin for him"² is the oft-repeated Qur'anic provision. And hence the maxim الضرورات تبيح المحظورات (stress renders the forbidden permissible).³ Again, there are rules in Muslim law which though not compulsory yet their execution is praiseworthy (مستحب). Thirdly, there are those whose performance or omission is left to the discretion of individual persons (مباح).

It is regarding only this last category of acts that custom and treaty impositions are upheld and rendered valid by Muslim law. And as explained above, treaties concluded under stress against the injunctions of canon law (شريعة) are binding only so long as the necessity remains. Rules regarding the repudiation of treaties will be discussed in a subsequent chapter.

It is to be noted that treaties are sometimes wholly and deliberately law-making between the parties concerned; on

¹ In modern times also there are only a very few universal treaties, such as the Postal Convention of Berne; and the Muslim states have adhered to them.

² Qur'an, 2: 173, 5: 3, 6: 120, 6: 146, 16: 115.

³ Sarakhsiy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 479.

other occasions they refer incidentally to legislation in an international sense.

8. *Official Instructions.*

The next source is contained in official instructions to generals, admirals, ambassadors, delegates and representatives, in short to those officials who have some connection or other with the conduct of the state in international affairs. These may be published, or confidentially given out and kept secret. They often contain important material for our subject. From the very time of the Prophet down to our age we find this practice continued. A few of the more typical documents containing such instructions will be given in an appendix.

9. *Internal Legislation and Unilateral Declarations.*

Although the whole of international law is, in a sense, part of the internal legislation and law of the land, yet we must distinguish between general rules of international conduct and particular rules concerning particular states or particular classes of foreigners. Again, there is a difference between rules correlated and reciprocated and between rules that have no counterpart. To illustrate this last point, we may refer to the command of the Prophet that non-Muslims should be expelled from Arabia¹ where they can no longer settle, and the Qur'ānic injunction that non-Muslims cannot enter the Grand Mosque of Mecca.²

10. *Custom and Usage.*

Very little has so far been written, from a scientific point of view, on the place of custom, usage, conventions and the like in Muslim law, although the validity of such things as *'urf*, *'ādah*, *ta'āmul* and *ūmūm al-balawā* has been recognised in Muslim jurisprudence without much dispute.

¹ Bukhārīy, 55 : 176, 58 : 6, 64 : 83.—Muslim, Vol. V, p. 75.—Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 222.—Ibn Sa'd, Vol. 2/1, p. 44.—Wensinck, مفتاح كنوز السنة, *in loco*.

² Qur'an, 9 : 28.

Of course much heart-burning is caused by indiscreet ways of putting things, and we must not disregard the difference between saying that "all your relatives will *die* before you" and "you will *live* longer than all your relatives," a real difference, which, as the story goes, caused one astrologer dishonour and brought to the other untold riches on the part of their royal master. By the utter disregard of these human weaknesses, we shall be doing service to nobody. Modern European writers, for instance, say : Muslim law was greatly influenced by Roman law—and of course this is liable to cause resentment. A great Orientalist of Jewish descent has, for instance, denied any influence of Roman law on Muslim law, still he maintains that Jewish law has influenced it, basing his argument on the presence of Jews in Madinah in the time of the Prophet. All such conclusions and allegations were inspired by objectionable motives ; hence they do not give the whole picture, affected as they are by narrow vision.

This is not the proper place to make a thorough study of the question.¹ Yet I may be misunderstood if I do not make it clear why custom is to be considered as one of the sources of Muslim law in general and of Muslim International Law in particular.

We have seen under source No. 2, that what the Prophet tolerated among his Companions rendered it valid and lawful. The very "toleration" (تقریر, as it is termed) implies the recognition of custom, no matter old or new, as a source of law. As for later times the all-pervading maxims الأصل الاباحة² (everything that is not prohibited is

¹ See, however, the note of a lecture of mine, in *Islamic Culture*, January, 1939, pp. 125-126, and my extension lecture in the University of Madras : *فقہ اسلامی کی تدوین و ارتقاء میں بیرونی مؤثرات* (i.e., Foreign Influences in the Development and Codification of Muslim Law), not yet published.

² Cf. Qur'an, 4 : 24, 6 : 120 : " Lawful unto you are all beyond those mentioned " ; " And He hath explained unto you that which is forbidden unto you."

permissible), and العرف قاض (custom or rule of convention is decisive)¹ leave not the slightest doubt that custom and usage, with certain qualifications, are lawful sources of rules of conduct for the Faithful.

We must, however, not confuse laws of the Muslims and Muslim laws. By the former I understand the laws which certain sections of the vast Muslim community observe, for instance, the customs regarding inheritance, marriage, etc., prevailing among Muslims in the Malay Peninsula, Berberland of North Africa, the Punjab, Bombay and Malabar in India and the like,—customs very much at variance with the tenets of what the Qur'ān and the *Sunnah* have expressly laid down.

Regarding Muslim law proper, we know that Islam began in Mecca, full of pagan Arab traders who constantly travelled abroad. Later its centre of gravitation moved to Madinah when the Prophet migrated to that place, where Jews also lived in thousands. Not a decade had passed since the Hijrah when the boundaries of the Muslim State crossed with those of the Persian and Byzantine empires. A decade and a half still later, in the year 27 H.,² we see the armies of Islam penetrating even into Spain, to remain

¹ There are some more from ash-Shaibānī's writings :

شرح المسير الكبير (I, 194) : Evidence of custom is like that of the text of a statute. المعروف بالعرف كالثابت بالنص (idem, IV, 23, 25) : To learn through custom is like prescribing in the text. اطلاق من الكلام يتقيد بدلالة العرف (idem, IV, 16) : A general may be rendered a particular by evidence of custom.

العادة تجعل حكما اذا لم يوجد التصريح بخلافه (idem, I, 198) : Usage is decisive when not prescribed otherwise in the text.

العادة معتبرة في تقيد مطلق الكلام (idem, II, 296) : Usage is valid to particularise a general rule.

² Tabarī, *Annales*, I, 2816-17 ; Ibn al-Athīr, *Kāmil*, III, 72 ; Abul-Fidā', I, 262 ; Dhahabī, *at-Ta'rikh al-Kabir*, anno 27 ; cf. Gibbon, *Decline and Fall*, V, 555 (ed. Oxford University Press).

there until Ṭāriq came many generations later to complete the conquest, when the Islamic State, like a colossal crescent, spread from the Pyrenees to the mountains of China, crossing Persia, Mesopotamia, Syria, Arabia, Egypt, Turkistān, Armenia, and all the coastal countries of North Africa. Thus it came into contact with the Meccans and other Arabs, as well as with Jews, Christians, Greeks, Spaniards, Persians (Magians), Buddhists of Turkistān and Chinese of Sinkiang,—to mention but a few of the more civilised peoples of those times of whom Islam made many converts. Histories mention that not much difference is to be found between the pre-Islamic pagan pilgrimage and the Islamic Hajj, which is one of the five basic elements of Islam ; that the Caliph 'Umar is reported to have adopted *in toto* the Persian revenue laws when that empire was absorbed into Muslim State ; that the greatest number of jurists Islam has produced came from Bukhārā, Turkistān and adjoining countries where Buddhist and Chinese influence predominated ; that the pupils of the Companions of the Prophet and their pupils, the teachers of Abū-Hanīfah, Mālik, ash-Shāfi'iy, Ibn-Hanbal and others were generally *mawālī* of non-Arab origin who could not obviously have forgotten all that they knew of the existing and prevalent conditions of pre-Islamic origin in their countries and even families ; that Abū-Hanīfah himself had a Persian father and an Indian mother ; that there are express commands in the Qur'ān¹ to follow the laws of Moses, Jesus, Abraham and other Messengers of God, and it is reliably recorded that the Prophet ordered² Muslims to follow the practice of the Jews and Christians in matters in which there was no provision in Muslim law ; that not only were many pre-Islamic Arab customs tolerated by the

¹ Qur'ān, 6 : 84-91 : (" so follow their guidance ") ; 3 : 95, 16 : 123 ; (" Follow the religion of Abraham ").

² E.g., جامع الترمذی in connection with combing.

Prophet, but he went so far as to prescribe *يعمل في الاسلام* ¹ *بفضائل الجاهلية* (in Islam the virtues of the days of Ignorance [in Arabia] will be acted upon). No doubt, legal rules of Byzantines, Persians and others did not come into Muslim law with any sanctity attached to them, but simply as a matter of convenience and expedience *and* because they were not against the injunctions of positive Muslim law. Their infiltration may be traced to a very great extent to the customs and usages of the country occupied by the Muslims.

Thus we see that notwithstanding the fact that many customs and usages, conventions and habits were amended or even abolished by Islam, there is no denying the fact that the very large remainder contributed, to a considerable extent, to Muslim law as one of its sources.² (Cf. also my article "Influence of Roman Law on Muslim Law" in the Journal of Hyderabad Academy, Vol. VI.)

Retrospect.

We can see now that the relevant portions of the Qur'ān and the *Sunnah* form permanent positive law of the Muslims in their international dealings; state legislation and treaty obligations establish temporary positive law; and all the rest provide non-positive or case-law and suggested law respectively.

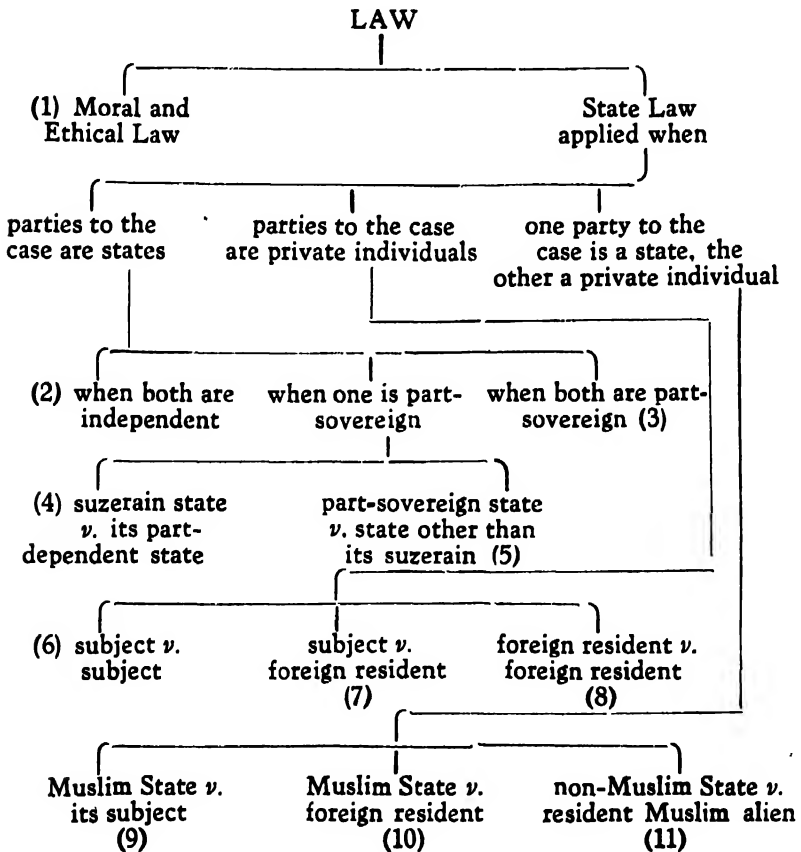
¹ Ibn-Hanbal, مسند III, 425.

² For a detailed enumeration see among others *المحبر* of Ibn-Habīb السنن التي كانت الجاهلية § (ed. Hyderabad, 1361 H., pp. 309-40). سنتها فبقى الاسلام بعضها وأستقط بعضها -

CHAPTER VII

The Place of International Law in Law General

BY law we mean the rules which the government of a state passes or approves for the conduct of its whole *gubernatorium* and its subjects. Thus, the rules of conduct for that part of the *gubernatorium* which is concerned with foreign relations will be international law. This may more clearly be appreciated in the following division of law which we humbly suggest :



We have no direct concern in international law with No. 1. Nos. 2, 3, 4, and 5 comprise law governing inter-governmental relations. These along with Nos. 10 and 11 form public international law. Nos. 7 and 8 belong to private international law. And Nos. 6 and 9 comprise law of the land in its narrower sense which is also called civil law and municipal law as distinguished from the international law of a state. It may, more appropriately, be called for our purposes internal law.

CHAPTER VIII

The Contribution of Islam to the Internationalising of Human Society

THE perplexing complexity of human society is but a reflection of human nature. A mixture of contradictory elements, or, I should rather say, of both good and evil simultaneously, —though of varying grades,—the most rational being, man, at times surpasses the angels and at others even the Devil would look shy before him. Consequently, among other things, human society has been the object of two tendencies at the same time. The one centripetal, from independent and self-contained families into tribes, from tribes into citizens of city-states, from city-states into vaster states, empires, commonwealths and even attempts at world order,—such is said to be the one aspect of the chequered history of human society. The other centrifugal, from being relative members and descendants of one and the same family of Adam and Eve,¹ differences of colour, language, country, race and the like have so accentuated the diversity that no insignificant toll of bloodshed has stigmatised the fratricidal society of the human species.

It is no use attempting the impossible, either to change human nature or convert the average being into a rare and exceptional extremist.

It is to be regretted that in spite of such valuable contribution to different sciences and institutions, the ancients were not able to get rid of the narrow vision of their geographical or political nationhoods. Even ancient religions

¹ For ethnological unity of man see O. Ehrenfels: "Ethnology and Islamic Sciences" (in *Islamic Culture*, 1940, pp. 434 f.).

seem to have been national rather than universal and for the whole of humanity. Nevertheless these ancient, national religions also preached in the beginning love and peace. The chromatic, birth and racial superiority-complex which is still such a vital force in some parts of Africa, America and Europe, is, to me, the work rather of pagan and irreligious generations than the result of commands of the religions they profess.

Islam has rather been fortunate in discarding, from the very first day, differences of race and colour, country and language, in favour of the universal brotherhood of the Faithful.

See for instance :

The believers are naught else than brothers. Therefore make peace between two brothers of yours (if they happen to oppose each other), and observe your duty to God that ye may obtain mercy. (Qur'ān, 49 : 10.)

And hold fast, all of you together, to the cable of God, and do not separate. And remember God's favour unto you : how ye were enemies and He made friendship between your hearts so that ye became as brothers by His grace ; and (how) ye were upon the brink of an abyss of fire, and He did save you from it. Thus God maketh clear His revelations unto you, that ye may be guided. (*Idem*, 3 : 103.)

And obey God and His Messenger, and dispute not one with another lest ye falter and your wind depart (from your sails); but be steadfast ! Lo ! God is with the steadfast. (*Idem*, 8 : 46.)

Lo ! this, your community, is one sole community, and I am your Lord, so worship Me. (*Idem*, 21 : 92 ; cf. 23 : 52.)

Islam is a religion of unity and action which safeguards individual rights and liberties and provides at the same time for collective welfare. I refer to the institutions of *zakāt* and *Baitul-Māl*. And as its call was not meant, from its very inception, for any particular country, it was an advance over what had hitherto been done to internationalise human

society.

Besides this universality of its call, Islam instituted *hajj* and *khilāfat*, which I shall consider one after the other.

Brotherhood of Man

A few typical quotations from the Qur'ān alone would suffice to illustrate my point :—

(a) Creation of mankind from the same couple :

O mankind ! Be careful of your duty to your Lord, Who created you from a single soul and from it created its mate and from them twain hath spread abroad a multitude of men and women. (Qur'ān, 4 : 1.)

O mankind ! Lo ! We have created you from a single male and female, and We have made you nations and tribes that ye may distinguish one another. Lo ! the noblest of you, in the sight of God, is the one who feareth [Him] most. Lo ! God is Knower, Aware. (*Idem*, 49 : 13.)

Other verses to the same effect, *cf.* 6 : 99, 7 : 189, 39 : 6.

(b) Mankind is one community :

Mankind were one community . . . (*Idem*, 2 : 213.)

Mankind were but one community ; then they differed ; and hath it not been for a word that had already gone forth from thy Lord it had been judged between them in respect of that wherein they differ. (*Idem*, 10 : 20.)

(c) Islam's universal call :

[Muḥammad !] thou askest them no fee for it [*i.e.*, Islam]. It is naught else than a reminder *unto all nations*. (*Idem*, 12 : 104 ; *cf.* 81 : 27.)

And We have not sent thee [O Muḥammad !] save as a bringer of good tidings and a warner *unto all mankind* ; but most of mankind know not. (*Idem*, 34 : 28.)

And We sent thee not [Muḥammad] save as a mercy *for all nations*. (*Idem*, 21 : 107.)

(d) Difference of colour and language explained :

And the difference of your languages and colours, lo ! herein indeed are portents [of the mastery of the Creator] for men of knowledge. (*Idem*, 30: 22.)

And We have made you nations and tribes that ye may distinguish one another . . . (*Idem*, 49: 13.)

(e) Toleration par excellence :

Lo ! those who believe [in that which is revealed unto thee, Muḥammad], and those who are Jews, and Christians and Sabeans,—whoever believeth in God and the Last Day and doth right,—surely their reward is with their Lord, and there shall no fear come upon them neither shall they grieve. (*Idem*, 2: 62.)

Lo ! those who believe (*i.e.*, Muslims), and those who are Jews, and Sabeans and Christians—whichever believeth in God and the Last Day and doth right—there shall no fear come upon them neither shall they grieve. (*Idem*, 5: 69.)

And a host of other verses, especially 3: 64, addressed by the Prophet to foreign rulers, together with innumerable sayings of the Prophet and instances of continuous practice all through these fourteen hundred years of Islam, testify to the same effect.

I pointedly invite attention to quotations under (b) and (d) that in Islam the differences of men in colour and language are but phenomena testifying to the great mastery of the Creator; and that not only all human beings descended from the same couple but that even their religions have had the same source. Quotations under (e), which have twice been repeated in the Qur'ān, are very significant, and show clearly that if the people of the religions cited therein follow fully all the commands of their original religion, shred of later additions, there is no fear regarding their salvation.

What use of international law if it does not aspire to cultivate harmony between nations ?

Hajj or Pilgrimage to Ka'bah.

Islam is ultra-national in its ethnological and other

current senses. So the brotherhood of the Faithful, which Islam has inculcated, is truly international. And for the purpose of fostering this brotherhood and causing greater contact between the members of the Muslim community spread all over the world, the institution of *hajj* or pilgrimage to Mecca, its cradle, has played a prominent rôle almost from the beginning of Islam. *Hajj* is one of the five "duties for each and every one" (فرض عين), to be observed by the Muslims. Every Muslim, male or female, must perform at least once in life the pilgrimage to the House of God in Mecca, if he or she "can find a way thither."¹ Arabia lies in the midst of the three continents known as the old world. Thus, Mecca is even geographically the centre of the old world, or to adopt the technical term used by the Muslims, it is situated on the "navel of the earth" (ناف زمين). The pilgrim is required to put off his ordinary clothes and every one wears a simple and humble *ihrām*, leads a life of great self-control, abstains from enjoyment or fulfilling passionate desires, during the *hajj* period of his stay in or around Mecca. It is really an awe-inspiring scene to see king and clown dressed alike, standing shoulder to shoulder during the services, and one actually feels the demonstration of the Qur'ānic description of Doomsday: "With whom shall lie the power supreme on this day? With God, the One, the Almighty."² A really cosmopolitan gathering, and a complete equality of the children of Adam is nowhere else to be found. Such is the annual *hajj* of Islam.

Khilāfat.

Another internationalising institution of Islam is the Khilāfat (Caliphate). When the Prophet breathed his last, the Muslims of that time came to the conclusion, with the exception of perhaps two or three individuals, that there could be only one ruler for the totality of the Muslims. Although the Muslim empire soon spread far and wide

¹ Qur'ān, 3 : 97.

² *Idem*, 40 : 16.

outside its birthplace, Arabia, yet practically for more than a hundred years the unity of the Muslim empire remained intact. Muslims all over the world, subjects of the Muslim State as well of non-Muslim states, all recognised the Caliph in Madīnah, or later Damascus, as the Commander of the Faithful. After the Umayyad dynasty of Damascus, the Muslim world was divided first into two and later even more independent states. Yet the idea of the succession to the Prophet could not be eliminated from the Muslims. The very claim for this by more than one Muslim ruler at a time supports the contention more than it contradicts it.

There has been no difference of opinion among the Muslims as to the desirability of the institution of a central caliphate except for the insignificant and now almost extinct sect of the Khārijites. The difference among the Sunnīs and the Shi'ahs is only regarding the person chosen for the purpose immediately after the Prophet. Somehow or other, the rightfulness of 'Alīy, a cousin and son-in-law of the Prophet, and his descendants, to the post has become a part of dogma with the Shi'ahs, while the Sunnīs as a matter of fact say that Abū-Bakr, 'Umar and 'Uthmān were elected by almost the unanimous vote of the community, and succeeded to the temporal power of the Prophet one after the other before 'Alīy himself was finally chosen for the purpose at the tragic murder of 'Uthmān, and that even 'Alīy did not lag behind in paying homage to and co-operating sincerely with his predecessors in the office.

There is, however, still an opportunity of easy disposal of this matter, since neither of these respected figures is now alive. It cannot be denied that the Prophet functioned as a spiritual guide as well as a temporal leader of the Faithful. As far as the spiritual heritage is concerned, there is almost unanimity even among the Sunnīs, except a branch of the less numerous Naqshbandīyah order of Şūfis, that it was 'Alīy who was the immediate successor of the Prophet. Again, as far as the temporal power is concerned, all agree that it is a transitory thing, and even the Sunnīs do not believe that

Abū-Bakr had any right to the post other than the fact that he was elected by the overwhelming majority. Thus the difference resolves itself into the question of fact whether the Prophet had or had not nominated 'Alīy as his immediate temporal successor. Obviously the question is not of any practical importance to-day, after thirteen centuries have revolved since the demise of the persons concerned. The Sunnīs do not mind 'Alīy's being styled the وصی رسول الله (Executor of the will of the Messenger of God), since legally an executor and a beneficiary of a testament are not co-equal.

Nomination by the reigning Caliph of his successor, failing which a general election, must obviously have been, and was in fact, a matter of course, among the Shī'ahs as well as the Sunnīs at all times.

CHAPTER IX

The History of International Law Before Islam

MONTESQUIEU has rather bluntly remarked :

“ Toutes les nations ont un droit des gens ; et les Iroquois mêmes, qui mangent leurs prisonniers, en ont un. Ils envoient et reçoivent les ambassades, ils connaissent les droits de la guerre et de la paix : le mal est que ce droit des gens n'est pas fondé sur les vrais principes.”¹

But which people has not once been primitive and even savage ? I need not dilate here on the causes that led to the early or late appearance of different peoples in the society of civilised nations. Further, I do not need to point out that man is the most receptive of created beings ; yet it must not be lost sight of that, given similar circumstances, men, more often than not, think alike ; and it will be absurd to conclude that the later in time must unavoidably have borrowed his ideas in all cases from those who lived earlier.

It is not necessary here to refer to the history of international laws of other nations in any detail except in so far as they may have contributed to the development of Muslim International Law. The known history of Man begins with the Sumerians, naturally very hazy. There were facilities of intercourse between the peoples of the valleys of the Tigris and the Euphrates. The people of Syria, however, had the greater advantage of utilising the

¹ *Esprit des Lois*, livre I, ch. 3, p. 7 (Paris 1860) : all the nations possess an international law, even the Iroquois who eat their prisoners. They send and receive envoys, they know the rights of war and peace. Only trouble is that this international law is not based on right principles.

accumulated experience of past ages along with their own gifts and resources. People of the Mediterranean sea-board possess, therefore, peculiar interest. Their intercourse led not only to interchange of commodities but even of ideas. Great civilisations have flourished successively in Egypt, Syria, Carthage, Greece, and Rome—all situated on the Mediterranean. The peace treaty between the Egyptian Ramses II (Sesostris, who ruled between 1292-1225 B.C.) and the King of the Hittites of Northern Syria, designed in the treaty as *Ḫiṭāser* (chief of *Ḫiṭai*, now the Turkish *Hatay*) is probably the oldest diplomatic document that has come down to us in the original, a silver tablet in this case, inscribed in the Hittite language. It stipulated not only the end of the great Syrian war and perpetual peace between the two kings under the protection of the deities of both the countries, but also an alliance against the enemies of both the contracting parties. The trade and industries of both the nations were to be immune. Convicts of one country taking refuge in the other had to be extradited, but it was expressly provided that certain kinds of punishment could not be inflicted on the people so extradited.¹ The Phœnicians gave Greece such an elementary requirement of civilisation as the alphabet. The Hebrews or Jews, another Syro-Palestinean people, evolved a peculiar culture of their own under Moses and the Divine Pentateuch. The Jews were sworn enemies of some foreign nations, as the Amalekites for example, with whom they declined to have any peaceful relations whatever. When they went to war with these people, they killed not only the warriors on the battlefield, but also the aged, the women, and the children in the homes (see Samuel XV for instance). With those nations, however, of which they were not sworn enemies, they used to have international relations. Ambassadors were considered sacrosanct and treaties were faithfully observed.² The

¹ Holtzendorff, *Handbuch des Völkerrechts*, I, 168.

² Oppenheim, *International Law*, I, 55-56 (4th ed.).

influence of the Jewish Bible has continued to exert itself on the world through European nations who embraced Christianity, Jesus Christ himself being born among the Jews.

We now pass to on Europe. The Greeks were greatly influenced by Phœnician culture, but the system of international law they evolved was essentially law between city-states of the Greek peninsula. All non-Greeks were termed barbarians, and Aristotle asserted that "nature intended barbarians to be slaves"¹ of the Greeks. Plato,² although he advised his countrymen to be more lenient in their mutual treatment, never entertained the idea that non-Greeks deserved any share in the milder treatment he proposed. The public law of Greek *nations* (subjects of different city-states are meant thereby), was considerably developed, and even a sort of League of Nations was established by many of these cities. The covenant of one such league, the Amphictyonic League of Delphi may be quoted with interest :

"We will not destroy any Amphictyonic town nor cut it from running water in war or peace ; if any other shall do this, we will march against him and destroy his city. If any one shall plunder the property of god or shall be cognizant thereof, or shall take treacherous counsel against the things in his temple at Delphi, we will punish him with foot and hand and voice, and by every means in our power."³

For a detailed study of Greek International Law, *The International Law and Custom of Ancient Greece and Rome* (2 vols.) by C. Phillipson and its admirable bibliography would be useful.

Rome conquered Greece politically yet soon it was reconquered by the Greeks, intellectually. The Romans evolved

¹ *Politics*, bk. I, ch. 7.

² Cited by Lawrence, *Principles of International Law*, p. 15 (6th ed.).

³ *International Law* by Wilson and Tucker, p. 16 (8th ed.).

their own laws. They set a college of priests, called *fetials*, who managed relations with foreign countries when war was declared, peace was made, treaties of friendship or alliance were concluded, when Romans had an international claim before a foreign state or *vice versa*. The life and property of the citizens of a state which had no treaty of friendship with Rome, were not safe in the Roman territory; such persons could be made slaves and their property seized. Only ambassadors were exceptions. Citizens of a friendly state had a right to legal protection; and justice was administered to them by the *prætor peregrinus*.¹

The Roman Empire ruled over Syria and Egypt also. Thus it had common frontiers with *Īrān*, and hence the vicissitudinous wars for centuries together between the two rivals. The Roman Empire was later divided into two, and it was the Eastern Roman Empire of the Byzantines with which we are concerned. Obviously this Eastern Empire was more intensely influenced by Greek than its counterpart in Rome. Nevertheless, it was the code of Justinian, adopted from laws of Rome, that regulated life in countries where the Arabs had direct commercial and other interests. Roman laws of peace, more especially private international law, could be regarded as fairly developed, yet the laws of war were in the main based on the discretion of individual commanders, and we can glean the rules of belligerent conduct in the wars waged against the Persians and others.

The Arabian Peninsula had common frontiers with both the Byzantine and the Persian Empires. Both these Empires had carved out for themselves colonies, protectorates and even buffer-states of purely Arab peoples. As we have already seen, what we call Muslim law has not been developed by Arabs only; people from Syria, *Īrān*, Egypt, *Turkistān*, etc., co-operated from the very first centuries of its development. The researcher in the *history* of Muslim International

¹ Cf. Oppenheim, *International Law*, I, 59-61 (4th ed.).

Law will deal with Roman, Persian, Buddhist and other systems of international law. For me it will suffice to describe conditions in Arabia only, from the point of view of international law, since it was the rules prevalent in this country that were in the main utilised by the Muslims with adaptation, amendment, addition and adoption.

Pre-Islamic Arabia

At the dawn of Islam, early in the seventh century of the Christian era, Arabia presents itself as a vast congeries of innumerable independent political groupings, based primarily on tribalism. The tribes were either nomad or settled. Even members of one and the same tribe were, more often than not, divided into these two kinds. The settled Arabs had generally their own city-states. "Each city had its surrounding territory, large enough—but not unnecessarily extensive—to allow of the convenient assembly of its free citizens, for the purpose of exercising the rights and discharging the obligations incidental to citizenship . . . Though the Arabs spoke a common language, took part in common fairs, consulted the same oracles, worshipped the gods in common [and to a great extent observed the same customs] yet their separation into independent city-states rendered possible the evolution of law governing the relationships between them in their capacity of sovereign powers. The position of such autonomous communities cannot be said to be fundamentally different from that, say, of the European States from the point of view of the operativeness and applicability of an international law. It is true that the intrinsic kinship of the Arabs stamps them as practically one nation, even though subdivided into different municipalities. But international law requires for its development the existence of independent *political* communities, not necessarily different in race, language, religion, or anything else . . . The characteristic note of each city was competence and self-sufficiency . . . The intense genealogism of the Arabs

prompted an attitude of civic seclusion. The spirit of separateness, of isolation made political unity impossible. To the Arab, his state, *i.e.*, his tribe and tribal settlement (دار and قرية), was no vapid abstraction, but a living reality. He was bound to it by an almost indissoluble tie; he was ready to give up his life for it, since he was indebted to it for his privileges, for his dignity, for his very existence. . . . The Arabs as Arabs cherished aspiration for unity, but as citizens their constant aim was decentralization; and their claims of citizenship invariably triumphed over those of racial kinship. Although their genius was so versatile, they found free scope for its exercise within the circumscribed limits of their respective city-states and settlements. They constructed no great works of engineering skill. Their concern was with the conquest of the intellectual dominions (*poetry*, I mean) rather than with the establishment of territorial empires. Their nature is characterized by the love of art,¹ as a contrast, for example, to the love of knowledge attributed to the Greek, and to love of wealth, attributed to the Phoenicians and Egyptians. They may have proved incapable of political unity, but they were possessed of that intellectual unity which marks the true civilization of a people."²

In remoter antiquity, especially in Yaman, veritable empires had sprung up, thanks to the amenities of life that were provided there by nature, yet at the dawn of Islam even there chaos ruled supreme and the older kingdoms and empires had disintegrated into petty townships. The territories under foreign domination such as 'Umān, Baḥrain, etc., were rather better off, although even there division into

¹ See further: *The City-State of Mecca (Islamic Culture, July 1938)*, p. 275.

² Adopted *mutatis mutandis* from what others have written regarding others, yet so true of Arabia also. Regarding the conditions of Mecca, the birthplace of the Prophet, see my article, *The City-State of Mecca, (Islamic Culture, July 1938)*.

nomads and the settled obtained.

Not only the city-states of Arabia, but even the large number of wandering tribes could be dosed with the same physic of political personality. In political autonomy they were inferior to none. Territory they did possess, although they lived in different seasons of the year in different parts of it. They also had their own political organisation. They administered justice, they waged war and concluded treaties just as any other state.

Bellum omnium contra omnes has so often been pictured as the normal condition of Arabia. It may be true to a certain extent. But if we concede to the Arab tribes same privileges as are possessed by independent States,—and why not?—the horror vanishes. A man without political nationality and passport cannot expect much better treatment even in our modern times. The perpetual strife of tribes in Arabia, however, is no denying the fact that the Arabs managed, somehow or other, how to live a peaceful life also. For instance, they evolved the institution of the months of the *truce of God* (أشهر حرم)¹ which so much mitigated the hardships reserved for unallied tribes. Again, they developed the escort system to the pitch of fine art, which was another factor in saving life and property in the midst of hungry Beduins. An interesting and important quotation from a classical author gives a glimpse of this great institution :—

“ Every trader who set out from Yeman or Hedjāz for Dūmatuljandal (in the extreme north of Arabia), acquired the services of the Quraishite escort as long as he travelled in the country inhabited by the Muḍarite tribes, since no Muḍarite nor ally of the Muḍarites harassed the Quraishite traders. So, the Kalbites never harassed them as they were allied to the Banū-al-Jusham; and the

¹ Cf. *Islamic Culture* (July 1938), pp. 267-268; Proceedings of the 2nd Session of the Idārah Ma‘ārif Islāmiyah, Lahore, pp. 98-99; *Hyderabad Academy Journal*, V. 96 et. seq.

Ṭayites also never harassed them because of their alliance with Banū-Asad . . . When they intended to go to 'Irāq, they acquired the services of escorts of Banū-'Amr-ibn-Marṭhad (of the clan of Qais-ibn-Tha'labah), which protected them in the whole of the country inhabited by the tribes of Rabi'ah . . . When going to al-Muṣḥaqqar in Baḥrain, Quraishite escorts were sought . . . Then the fair of Ṣuḥār, in 'Umān, which assembled on the first day of the month of Rajab and continued for five days. And al-Julandā-ibn-al-Mustakbir taxed them there a tithe. Then the fair of Dabā which was one of the two major ports of Arabia. It was visited by traders from Sindh, India, China, people of the East and the West . . . When going to the fair of Maḥarah, in the southern extremity of Arabia, escorts of Banū-Muḥārib were employed . . . In the fair of Aden, however, no escorts were needed since it was a state-territory and of good order (ارض مملكة وامر محكم) . . . In the fair of Rābiyah in Ḥadramawt, the Quraishites were escorted by the Banū-Ākil-al-Murār and the rest of the people were escorted by Āl-i-Masrūq of Kindah. It brought glory and eminence to both these tribes. Yet the Ākil-al-Murār superseded their rivals on account of the patronage of the Quraishites¹ . . . 'Ukāẓ was the greatest of the Arab fairs, and was visited by the tribes of Quraish, Hawāzin, Ghatafān, Aslam, Aḥābīsh, 'Aḍl, ad-Dīsh, al-Ḥaiyā', and al Muṣṭaliq."²

There are innumerable instances of individual escorts in the pre-Islamic history of Arabia.³

¹ Cf. Olinder, *The Kings of Kinda of the Family of Ākil-al-Murār* (Lund, 1927).

² Muḥammad-ibn-Ḥabīb (d. 245 H.), *كتاب المعجم* (ed. Hyderabad), ch. Fairs of Arabia, pp. 263-68.

³ E.g., at-Tanūkhīy, *المستجد من فعلات الاجواد* (MS. Leningrad), Story No. 32, with acknowledgment to my class-mate in Bonn, Dr. Leo Pauly:

”و بعث (مهلهل) معي خذيراً من ماء الى ماء حتى وردوا الى الحيرة“

Another item of the law of nations was the system of "ilāf or pacts" (الإيلاف العهود),¹ developed by the Meccans. They concluded pacts, or rather obtained charters from the rulers of Syria, Abyssinia, Īrān, Yaman, etc., in order to bring caravans of trade to their respective territories, in perfect immunity. The Meccan magnates promised the many tribes inhabiting on their trade-route to these different countries to carry their goods as agents without commission for commercial purposes, or otherwise concluded treaties of friendship and immune transit through their respective territories.² The services of this organisation were available even to the people of foreign countries, such as Īrān, on payment of necessary remuneration.³

Tribal alliances for particular purposes or permanent co-operation were also in great vogue, in all parts of the country. Many ceremonies were observed at the time of the "signature," interchange of drops of blood in wine before drinking it,⁴ besmearing with scents,⁵ lighting fires (نار الحلف)⁶ cutting tufts from the forehead and cutting the nails of the contracting parties and burying them under the subsoil of some lake,⁷ and many such things are recorded at different occasions, besides the more common shaking of hands. Prof. Krenkow once told me that he had read somewhere in

(Continued)

Again al-Marzūqīy, كتاب الازمنة و الامكنة, II, 161 :

"وكانت هذه الاسواق... لا يصل احد اليها الا بخفير ولا يرجع الا بخفير"

¹ Muḥammad-ibn-Ḥabīb, *op. cit.*, p. 162.

² Ya'qūbīy, I, 280 ff. ; Ibn-Sa'd, I/1, pp. 43, 45 ; Ṭabarīy, *Annales*, I, 1089 ; *idem*, *Tafsir*, Vol. XXX, Sūrah *Īlāf* ; *Lisān al-'Arab*, s.v. *Īlāf* ; Lammens, *La Mecque à la veille de l'Hégire*, p. 128, etc.

³ Fraenkel, *Aramäisch. Fremdenwörter*, p. 176 ; *idem*, *Schutzrecht*, p. 296 ; Lammens, *La République marchande de la Mecque*, p. 25 ff. ; Ibn-Sa'd, I/2, p. 32 ;—cited by Heffening, *Das islamische Fremdenrecht*, p. 89.

⁴ Dīnawarīy, p. 353 ; Ya'qūbīy, I, 288.

⁵ Ya'qūbīy, I, 288.

⁶ Qalqashandīy, صبح الامشى, I, 409 (*cf. idem* نهاية, *in loco*).

⁷ Dīnawarīy, p. 353.

classical Arabic literature a way to deposit a treaty in safety. The document of the treaty was simply torn into two pieces, and each contracting party kept half of it, and whenever there was need to refer to its terms, the two pieces were joined. Of course there is less possibility of falsifying in this case! The treaty of the social boycott of the family of the Prophet by the Quraish was hung in the sanctuary of Ka'bah.¹ Special formulæ also seem to have been in vogue (cf. *الدمر الدمير الهدم الهدم*, Ibn-Hishām, p. 297).

This leads us to envoys. There is a vast literature on the subject of Arab chieftains visiting foreign rulers,² and foreign ambassadors coming to Arabia. The Yamanites sent an envoy to Ctesiphon to ask for Persian help against the Abyssinians.³ The dam of Ma'rib, in Yaman, still preserves the long inscription of Abrahah, who repaired it, stating that on a certain day he received ambassadors of several foreign rulers, including the Byzantine Emperor.⁴ Instances of inter-tribal and inter-municipal embassies in Arabia are innumerable. The Meccans twice sent envoys to the Court of the Negus against the Muslim refugees.⁵ Before his Islam, 'Umar was the hereditary ambassador-spokesman (*سفير ومناظر*) of Mecca; and in the words of Ibn-'Abd-Rabbihi " whenever there was war, they sent 'Umar as their envoy plenipotentiary; and if and when a foreign tribe challenged the priority of the Quraish it was again he who went and replied, and the Quraish agreed to what he uttered. " ⁶ The person of an envoy was always considered inviolable (*ان الرسل لم تزل آمنة في الجاهلية والاسلام*).⁷

¹ Ibn-Hishām, p. 231.

² Ibn-Ḥajar, *الاصابة* s. v. *عطار بن حاجب*; Ibn-Sa'd, I/1, pp. 43, 45; Ṭabarī, *History*, I, 1537; al-Masūdī, *Murūj*, IV, 250: "'Umar met many a King before Islam"; al-Iṣbahānī, *Aghānī*, XII, 48-49, etc.

³ Ya'qūbī, I, 187. ⁴ Sulaimān Nadwī, *ارض القرآن* I, 319.

⁵ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 217-21, 716-17.

⁶ *العقد الفريد*, II, 45.

⁷ Sarakhsī, *المبسوط*, X, 92.

Although there was no unity in Arabia, in the sense that there was no one central authority for the whole of the desert Península—so much so that in the words of Wellhausen there was "ein Gemeinwesen ohne Obrigkeit"¹ (a community without superior authority)—yet it cannot be denied that strong tendencies were already working, before Islam, for a centralised unity. We have seen how the escort system had already embraced the whole country, from Mecca to Baḥrain, from Dūmatuljandal to Maharah. I can go even so far as to conclude that already an economic—as distinguished from political—federation had been accomplished in the Arabian Peninsula.² For, when we study the question of fairs in Arabia, we learn a very curious story. Muḥammad-ibn-Ḥabīb³ and al-Marzūqīy⁴ record it on the authority of Ibn-al-Kalbīy that the sequence of the fairs was as follows :

No. of month	Dates	Place
1	10-30	<u>K</u> haibar
3	1-30	Dūmatuljandal
6	1-30	al-Mushaqqar (Baḥrain, now <u>H</u> asā)
7	20-25	Ṣuḥār ('Umān)
7	30-?	Dabā ('Umān)
8	15-?	<u>S</u> hiḥr (Maharah)
9	1-10	Aden (Yaman)
9	15-30	San'a' (Yaman)
11	15-30	Rābiyah (Ḥaḍramawt) as well as 'Ukāz (near Ṭā'if), simultaneously
12	1- 8	<u>D</u> hul-Majāz (between 'Ukāz and Mecca)
12	9-11	Minā (place of ḥajj, just outside Mecca).

¹ This is the title of a monograph of Wellhausen.

² Cf. my article in Hyd. Acad. Journal, V o l. V.

³ *Op. cit.*, pp. 263-68.

⁴ كتاب الازمنة والامكنة, II, 161-70.

Looking on the map, one finds at a glance that this means a tour of the whole of Arabiā, from North to East, from East to South, from South to West and from West to North. Our authors have particularly mentioned that these were not local fairs but were attended by people from far-off parts of the country and even from abroad. For instance, they have mentioned that the Meccans attended the fairs of Dūmatuljandal and Rābiyah ; or, that 'Ukāẓ was attended by Aslām, Ghāṭafān and others. They also mention that many of the traders went from one fair to another, naturally not to all. Again, these were the All-Arabia fairs (أسواق العرب الكبيرة)¹ ; otherwise there were many other important though rather provincial fairs like Majannah,² Badr,³ Ḥubāshah, etc.

Another evidence of centripetal tendencies in Arabia was the common arbitrators. These arbiters, soothsayers and other diviners were resorted to by all people irrespective of tribe and clan. 'Āmir-ibn-aẓ-Zarib and others have left many anecdotes of their impartiality, the reason for which they were trusted and respected.⁴

Among other international laws of peace in Arabia, we

¹ *Idem*, p. 161.

² Al-Marzūqīy, *op. cit.*, II, p. 161, footnote ; cf. Sa'id al-Afghānīy, أسواق العرب (ed. Damascus),

³ Ṭabariy, *History*, I, 1307, 1460.

⁴ Cf. "Administration of Justice in Early Islam," *Islamic Culture*, (April 1937); اسلامی عدل گستری اپنے آغاز میں, *Majallah 'Uthmāniyah*, XI/1-2 ; *Histoire de l'Organisation judiciaire en pays d'Islam* by E. Tyan, Vol. I, pp. 30-80 ; criticisms and additions on the above by Gaudefroy-Demombynes in *Revue des Etudes Islamiques*, April 1939.

come across asylum and quarter (جوار),¹ refuge,² naturalised and domiciled aliens (موالى حلفاء), extradition,³ hospitality of foreigners,⁴ and even laws of shipwreck.⁵

Last, but not least, I may mention in this connection the famous Order of Chivalry, *ḥilf al-fuḍūl*, inaugurated in the time of the Jurhumites and revived again during the adolescence of Muḥammad, the Prophet of Islam. Its adherents swore to side with anyone oppressed, be he a co-citizen or a foreigner, within their city limits, and not to give up his cause unless justice was done.⁶ (For other organisations, called *اِدَّة*, against the mischief of those who would not observe the months of the *truce of God*, functioning in different fair-centres, cf. *History of al-Ya'qūbiy*, Vol. I, pp. 314-15.)

Obviously, the laws of war were much more developed.

¹ E.g., Ibn-Hishām, p. 251 ; Ṭabarīy, *History*, I, 1203. For details, Ibn-Ḥabīb, *op. cit.* pp. 167-68. It is curious to note that the same word *Mawlā* has been used by the Arabs to denote the protector as well as the protected. The word *Jār*, which is probably older still, has the same dual significance. (Cf. the expressions *ان الله له جار* and *جار الله*). This cannot be due to lack of vocabulary or want of precision for a language like the Arabic which is nothing if it is not extraordinarily rich and precise. Nor can it be a mere accident in words more than one. To me its significance can never be too much exaggerated. For, it imports not a mere equality ; it is more than that. It implies an unification, an assimilation, a re-humanisation of the human society after its long feuds. There might we search the background of the fraternity of the Faithful of the days of Islam !

² Cf. ديوان الحماصة (ed. Europe, pp. 365-66) verses of Abū-Khirāsh :—
 جدت الهى بعد عروة اذ نجى خراش وبعض الشراهن من بعض
 ولم ادر من القى عليه رداه على انه قد سل من ما جد محض

³ There are innumerable cases when a vendetta was prevented thereby.

⁴ Wāqidīy (ed. von Kremer), p. 23.

⁵ Al-Azraqīy, اخبار مكة (ed. Europe), pp. 106-107.

⁶ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 85-86 ; Suhailīy, روض الانف, I, 90-94 ; Ibn-Sa'd, I/1, p. 41 ; *Musnad* of Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 190 ; الممتق لابن حبيب, MS. Hyderabad, *in loco*.

Declaration of war,¹ treatment of enemy person and property, prisoners of war,² distribution of booty,³ special privileges of the commander of the expedition,⁴ spies,⁵ hostages (رهائن),⁶ truce and armistice⁷ and parleys⁸ and a host of other matters, even distinctive uniforms,⁹ were treated in a more or less regularised manner, no matter how harsh or lenient.

Even 'neutrality was not unknown, and considerable material is available on the subject which we shall deal in Part IV of this monograph.

¹ MS. Brit. كتاب بكر و تغلب (cf. آذن بعضهم بعضا بالحرب Mus., Or., 6492, fol. 22a, b.).

و كانت ربيعة ; Tabariy, *History*, I, 2207 ; XII, 47 ; كتاب الاغانى لا تسبى اذا العرب يتسابون في الجاهلية -

² Cf. any dictionary, s. v. مرباع.

³ Cf. 'Abdallah-ibn-Ghanmah :

لك المرباع منها و الصفايا و حكمك والنشيطه و الفضول
quoted by the lexicon تاج العروس s. v. مرباع and by as-Sarakhsīy, *al-Mabsūt*, X, 9. The commander had a right over (1) a fourth of the booty, (2) any other thing which he chose before the distribution, (3) anything captured before the general plunder, (4) any fraction which was indivisible. For the "fourth" cf. also Tabariy, *History*, I, 1710.

⁴ They were of two kinds, viz., eye-spy (عين) and ear-spy (سمع), taken notice of even by the Qur'an.

⁵ نقاض جرير والغرزق, pp. 93, 462 (various kinds).

⁶ تاريخ يعقوبى, I, 314.

⁷ *Bakr wa Taghlib*, (MS. Brit. Mus.), fol. 21b.

⁸ For instance, in the protracted war of Bakr and Taghlib, once all the members of a razzia shaved their heads except one who was proud of his fine hair, and was consequently killed at the hands of his own folk unawares.

CHAPTER X

The Place of Islam in the History of General International Law

MODERN international law, in use practically all over the world, is in fact the law originated in Western Europe. Speaking of its history, writers habitually begin with the Greek city-states, describe the Roman period as immediately following, and then all of a sudden talk of modern times, neglecting the gap of full one thousand years that intervenes and asserting that during the Middle Ages: "For an International Law there was . . . no room and no need."¹

We do not know much about ancient Phœnicia, which gave Greece such an elementary requirement of culture as script, nor of Irān which was a rival of hers for centuries together. Otherwise we could have known to what extent the Greek system of international law owed its origin or modification to the influences of the city-states of the East.

Again, the influence of Eastern laws on Roman law has been examined by more than one competent scholar,² and I do not propose to dwell on this topic at this moment. The main object of this chapter is to examine how far the assertion of Oppenheim tallies with facts when he states that there was no international law in Europe during the Middle Ages, that there was no need of such at that time, and that there was no intermediary link between the Roman Period and Modern Times which are separated from each other by almost a thousand years.

¹ Oppenheim, *International Law*, I, 62 (4th ed. 1928).

² For instance, the French savant Collinet has published several monographs on the subject.

As we know, the characteristic feature of the Greek system was that it concerned itself with the limited number of city-states, situated in the Greek Peninsula and inhabited by people of one and the same race, speaking the same tongue, believing in the same religion, and observing the same customs, though independent of each other and jealously guarding this exclusive existence of theirs at no small cost. The Greek states had, in fact, two separate and distinct sets of the rules of international law, *viz.*, one to be observed in relation to Greek people, and the other regarding the rest of the world. This latter set of rules was less developed and scarcely systematised.

The chief feature of the Roman Period, on the other hand, is said to have been this, that their law applied not to people of one race but to subjects of the Roman Empire as a whole. This Roman Empire consisted, in fact, of so many states, more or less owning allegiance to Cæsar yet enjoying to a great extent internal autonomy and home-rule. Whenever these different states under the sway of Cæsar had some dispute with one another, the matter was referred to Rome and the decision of the Emperor, in accordance with Roman Law, was final. This is what our enthusiastic writers call the successor of the Greek system of international law and the precursor of its namesake of modern times. Perhaps one may be entitled to doubt the correctness of this statement. Why not give the name of Roman International Law to that set of rules which the Romans observed in their dealings with non Roman countries, in times of war as well as peace? These rules might not have been very elaborate nor greatly developed to the extent of being systematised, yet they alone would legitimately be entitled to be called Roman International Law, and not that set of administrative rules which were applicable only to the component parts of the Empire itself. It would be simply a misnomer. My impression, however, is that the Roman International Law of peace was a great advance on the Greek system (*cf.* Phillipson's

work) ; yet the Roman law of war remained very much the same, recognising no right for the belligerent, and using nothing but discretion regarding the non-Roman enemy.

The modern system of international law, however, recognises that a belligerent has as much right as a friendly state in time of peace ; that war does curtail certain rights, nevertheless many a right of an independent state remains intact even when the parties find themselves at war with each other.

How did that come about ? The modern European system is said to be based upon the Roman system, and we have seen that there was nothing in the Roman Law which could have suggested this change of attitude. Is it a purely modern achievement or any influence of Christianity or anything else ?

Let us take Christianity first. Although the European people began to embrace Christianity very early, yet the teaching of love inculcated by Jesus ill-suited the development of international law. Matthew transmits as the saying of Christ the injunction : " Resist not evil, but whoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other cheek also. " Or, " Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's ; and to God the things that are God's. " And again : " Put thy sword into its place, for all that take the sword shall perish by the sword. " The Gospel of St. John records : " My kingdom is not of this world. " And there are similar other sayings to the same effect. The early Christian teaching was, as Prof. Nys of Belgium has so clearly described,¹ that a Christian might not only not defend himself by the use of force, but he might even not ask for the help of the law of the country to protect him against tyranny. And as Prof.

¹ *Les Origines du droit international*, p. 44 : " Les préceptes de renoncement prêchés par le Christ avaient été exagérés ; non seulement il avait été défendu aux fidèles de se protéger par la force, mais ils ne pouvaient même réclamer le plus légitime des appuis, ils ne pouvaient invoquer la loi de l'Etat. "

Norman Bentwich has recognised : " It was the spirit of the Hebrew against the Canaanite "—and, may I add, also the movement for ' back to Rome ' ?—" and not the spirit of the Christian Gospel that moved the people that in the end became masters of the Roman Empire."¹ Further, at the time of the formulation of the theories of Modern European International Law, Christianity lacked moral force more than ever. The papacy and clericalism had fallen into disrepute. Grotius, father of European International Law, for instance, mentions in the preface to his *De jure belli ac pacis*, (§ 28) as the occasion of his compiling that book (published 1625), that in his time the Christian nations of Europe behaved in their wars in a manner that even barbarians would be ashamed of.

To me it is unthinkable that Christianity should have provided for the necessary change while the civilised Christian nations believed till as late as 1856 that the benefits of their international law were confined to Christian nations ; and it was no philanthropic or Christian impulse but a sheer need of practical politics that led them to admit the Muslim state of Turkey in the society of the civilised nations under the treaty of 1856. Japan and other non-Christian nations had to wait still further to have the same honour. Many people cherished the same notions even much later, and in 1889, Woolsey² still insisted that international law was what *Christian* nations recognised as obligatory in *their* mutual relations only. According to a Papal bull, the Christians were not bound by their pacts with Muslims.³

As Prof. Nys⁴ has vividly described, the Muslim occupation of Jerusalem, that cradle of Christianity, followed by

¹ *Religious Foundation of International Law*, p. 87.

² Th. D. Woolsey, *International Law* (4th ed., New York, 1889), *in loco*, cited by A. Rechid, *op. cit.*, p. 378.

³ For a long discussion and citations, *cf.* A. Rechid, *op. cit.*, pp. 426-30 ; Nys, *Les origines du droit international*, p. 216. Pope Nicolas IV declared pacts with non-Christians as null and void, *cf.* Nys, p. 161.

⁴ *Op. cit.*, pp. 141-42.

the occupation of Alexandria and Antioch, the two seats of Patriarchs, and the repeated defeats of Christians at the hands of the Umayyads, the Abbasids, the Turks and others so embittered the clergy that it led the Christian *church itself to augment the horror of war*. So much so that monks and even Popes organised crusades ; and the orders of Templars, and Hospitalers, the order of St. John and the Teutonic order and others came into being simply for the purpose of waging war against Islam.¹ Moreover, as Prof. Walker² has remarked, it was only under the stress of Muslim fear, that the Christian Europe learned for the first time during the Crusades, to unite ; and different European nations fought under the same banner, which they had never done before in spite of having embraced Christianity and recognising in the Pope their common superior.

The cultural reaction of Spain and Southern Europe and of the Crusades cannot be too strongly emphasised. But there is one more aspect which must not be neglected in this connection. The earliest European writers on international law, such as Pierre Bello, Ayala, Vitoria, Gentiles and others all hailed from Spain or Italy, and they were all the product of the renaissance provoked by the impact of Islam on Christendom. Baghdād in the East and Cordova in the West stood as torch-bearers of Arabian culture, and in between lay Europe obsessed by the fear of being dominated and subdued by one or the other of the two mighty empires of the Arabs.

Luther was a profound scholar of Arabic even as several Popes and other ecclesiastical dignitaries, not to speak of innumerable commoners that flocked into Arab Universities from all parts of Europe, and studied Arab laws and culture in their curricula. It was the Latin translation of Arabic books that supplied the educational needs of Europe for centuries.

¹ Nys, *op. cit.*, p. 143 ff.

² T. A. Walker, *A History of the Law of Nations*, Vol. I, p. 89.

selves had cultivated an international law? This we have already replied to in the preceding chapters, and we know that *siyar* (international law) has ever since been taught in all Muslim schools as part of *Fiqh* or Law.

It is clear from this that the Muslims very early developed a science of international law, and divorcing it from political science and law general, made it an independent subject. And when we study the early Arabic works on international law and allied subjects, we have a vivid idea of the relations of the Muslims and the *Rūm* (Byzantines) and others in time of war as well as peace, and we see how interaction was going on not only in the art of warfare but also in the very science of international law. In Muslim law we come, for the first time, across the full-fledged notion of recognising rights for the enemy in all times, in peace as much as in war, rights endorsed by the Qur'ān and by the practice of the Prophet and his successors. Further, it is also to be noted that books on *jura belli* (laws of war) by Ayala and Vitoria, Gentiles and Grotius and others have no counterpart in the Roman and Greek literatures, and they are the product of an age when European erudition was not so highly developed as to-day. To us, therefore, they are but echoes of these Arabic works on *jihād* (war) and *siyar* (conduct in time of war and peace). There must we seek for the link between the Roman and the Modern Periods, and there must we recognise the origin of the epoch-making change in the concept of international law. And we see the rôle played by Islam in the world-history of international law.

CHAPTER XI

The Ethical Basis of Muslim Law

IT must have been clear from the description of the origin, sources, and aim of Muslim Law that it attaches not a small importance to ethical values. In the beginning, there was one sole science which occupied Muslim intelligentsia, that of the commands of their religion. Soon many sciences had to be cultivated : history, philology, astronomy, etc. ; yet they all revolved round and were subservient to the all-embracing Qur'ān : history primarily to explain the allusions in the Holy Book, philology (including poetry) to explain the exact sense of the words used in it, astronomy and physical geography to find out the direction of the Ka'bah to turn towards, as also the timing for the daily religious services, grammar to standardise the text and diction of the Holy Writ, and so on. This Quranic basis of all sciences controlled the latitude to be exercised by poets and others, and always checked and pruned the morbid growth of un-Islamic morality.

When even the branches of law, like our own subject, International Law, acquired the status of independent and full-fledged sciences, they still retained their ethical values ; their provisions had to have the sanction from the Qur'ān or the *Sunnah* or the Orthodox Practice. No Muslim science was originally cultivated for its own sake, independent and regardless of others ; but all were made subservient to the *Shari'ah* in order to contribute to the well-being of Man in this world as well as in the Hereafter. Without belief in Resurrection and Reckoning, man may become more devilish than the Devil ; and man without enjoyment of what God

has created for him would be no man at all. The Golden Mean is the rule in Islam (خير الامور اوسطها), and this is true of even such an overwhelmingly materialistic science as Muslim International Law. And although divorced from law general and political science, international law of Islam was not based on mere human reason to be guided by convenience but continued to retain its ethical basis of the unchangeable Qur'ān and the *Sunnah*.

PART II

PEACE

CHAPTER I

Preliminary Survey

PEACEFUL or non-hostile relations of states—in which cessation of belligerents from fighting without treaty or settlement is *not* included—and their rights and duties may be described under the following heads :—

1. Independence.
2. Property.
3. Jurisdiction.
4. Equality.
5. Diplomatic and Commercial Relations.

CHAPTER II

Independence

STATES, whether small or big, are either sovereign and independent or part-sovereign, or non-sovereign. In international law no notice is taken of the last of these kinds. The real criterion of independence, as far as international law is concerned, is the right to foreign relations. If this right is absolute, we call it sovereignty and independence ; if the right is qualified and restricted, but not abnegated and extinguished, we have a case of part-sovereign state ; and if the right does not exist, it will be a non-sovereign state. Apart from this real test, there are other requisites of

independence which we shall describe presently.

It is, however, to be noted that the form of government has nothing to do with independence. A state may be a republic with elected heads, or a monarchy with hereditary succession. Even in the hereditary succession, the Islamic institution of *بیعة* (oath of allegiance), which has been in vogue ever since the time of the Prophet, some sort of social contract and expression of popular will is present. The Prophet assumed authority through Divine commission, nevertheless every adherent to his authority had to pay him homage and allegiance either personally or through representatives.¹ When the Prophet died, and the Divine connection, through revelation, ceased to exist, the question of succession arose. Three propositions were made, *viz.*, hereditary succession, popular election, diarchy. The Prophet left no male issue, and his nearest kin were a step-uncle and a cousin who was also his son-in-law. As for diarchy it was the proposal of some of the original inhabitants of Madīnah, called the Anṣār, who said : Let there be one ruler from amongst us and another from amongst you, the Meccans (منا أمیر و منکم أمیر)²; and apparently both the rulers had to rule conjointly since it was not possible to divide the territory ; or at best it implied the division of jurisdiction of the two rulers according to persons concerned, not places.³

¹ Cf. Wensinck, *بیعة s. v. مفتاح كنوز السنة*

² *Ibn Hishām*, p. 1016 ; Ṭabarī, *History*, I, 1823.

³ The two-rulers theory was rejected by the Muslims of that time not only on the ground of expediency but also because of the rivalries of the Awsites and Khazrajites in the Anṣār clans (cf. Ṭabarī, *History*, I, 1843). Yet Muslim history has left at least one instance of it in Ghaznah, in the dynasty of Maḥmūd Ghaznawī :—

چو مودود خونهای شان برفشاند بنه سال جای پدر ملک راند
وزان پس ازین کاروان رخت برد کلید جهان دیگران را سپرد
پس از وی علی و محمد به تخت بشرکت نشستند از زور بخت

Strict hereditary succession, in the form of the right of the eldest son, does not seem to have ever taken deep root in Islamic polity. The Orthodox Caliphate was not hereditary. Among the Umayyads and Abbasids frequently brothers or cousins succeeded even in the presence of sons. The Ottoman Turks had the curious rule of presuming the eldest member of the royal family as heir. In the Mughal empire of India, more often than not, the sword and capability decided the issue. The case of Raḍīyah Sulṭānah of India is almost unique, a case of the succession of the daughter in the presence of several sons.

We may conclude from this and the Orthodox Opinion that either the nomination by the reigning person of his successor, or, failing this, a general election by the Pillars of the State (أهل المل والعقد) is the rule Islam has accepted whether the nomination is that of the eldest son or not.

In short, form of government and succession to power are immaterial for an independent state. It remains, however, to see what is *independence* and what is *state*.

Independence.

Independence is defined by Ibn Khaldūn¹ as ولا تكون فوق يده يد قاهرة (the non-existence of any [external] power to enforce its will upon him i.e., an independent sovereign). In other words, it is the right of a state to administer all its internal and external affairs in such a way that it is neither controlled nor interfered with by any foreign power.

على بود فرزند مسعود را مجد پسر بود مودود را
 علی و مجد دران تختگاه بشرکت چوراندند ملکی دوماه
 شنیدم یکی روز سر لشکران زشاهی بکردند معزول شان

Futūḥus-Salāṭīn by 'Iṣāmī, couplets Nos. 1220-25 (ed. Agra, 1938). For another, cf. *infra*, § "Regular parts of dominions and Condominiums." Cf. further, (the Qur'ān, 20: 32) for diarchy: "واشركه في امری"

¹ Prelegomena, ch. 23 حقيقة الملك.

The right of a state to freedom of action is but a reflection of the original freedom of every man (الاصل في النامى الحرية)¹. This freedom to conduct state affairs is only relatively complete. Absolute independence has never existed and is nowhere found in human society. There are natural impediments testifying to the omnipotence of God and weakness of man ; there are correlative and reciprocal restrictions such as the respect of equal rights of others ; there are contractual limitations of one's liberty, no matter whether accepted originally under force or with mutual will ; and there are tacit acquiescences of unilateral declarations if there is no power to resist.

International law cannot apply without the existence of more independent states than one at the same time. As a fact several independent states have simultaneously existed since time immemorial yet the right of this co-existence was not easily conceded in civilisations of bygone days. The Greeks were told by their national philosophers that nature intended the non-Greeks to be slaves of the Greeks.² The Romans, although they never ruled even one thirtieth of the world, believed that they were the lords of the earth. The world was regarded by them as *orbis Romanus*, and the Romans were designed as the *princeps orbis terrarum populus*.³ Obviously, so long as religions were national, there was no possibility of conceding equality to others, even when they capitulated. The Jewish law, for instance, insisted :—

When thou comest nigh unto a city to fight against it, then proclaim peace unto it. And it shall be, if it make thee answer of peace, and open unto thee, then it shall be, that all the people that is found therein shall be tributaries unto thee, and *they shall serve thee*. And if it will make no peace with thee, but will make war

¹ Sarakhsiy, شرح السير الكبير IV, 71.

² Aristotle. *Politics*, bk. 1, ch. 7.

³ Phillipson, *International Law and Custom*, 1, 104.

against thee, then thou shalt besiege it: And when the Lord thy God hath delivered it into thine hands, thou shalt smite every male thereof with the edge of the sword: But the women, and the little ones, and the cattle, and all that is in the city, even all the spoil thereof, shalt thou take unto thyself; and thou shalt eat the spoil of thine enemies,¹ which the Lord thy God hath given thee.²

Islam believed, on the other hand, in the universality of the Divine call with which Muḥammad was commissioned.³ It was this conviction which led the Muslims to aspire at a world order, but we must distinguish between the domination of a nation based on race or language and between the nation aspiring to establish on earth the kingdom of God,⁴ where His word alone (the Qur'ān, in this case) should reign supreme.⁵ Obviously for Islam it makes not the slightest difference whether the ruler is an Arab or a Negro⁶ provided he is a Muslim.⁷ The Muslims considered as their own enemies only the enemies of God: the Polytheists, the Associators or the Atheists. They wanted to conquer the world not to plunder it, but peacefully to subjugate it to the religion of "Submission to

¹ Cf. on the contrary, the saying of the Prophet, that spoils were legalised to him for the first time, whereas in former religions they were burnt (Bukhārī, bk. *Jihād*, ch. legalisation of booty; Tirmidhī, bk. *Siyar*, ch. booty; شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 15; Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, under verses 8: 68, 69—Ṭabarī, *Hist.*, I, 1710).

² Deuteronomy, xx, 10-14. For a contrast with Muslim law, see the Prophet's instructions in Appendix A, 1-a *infra*.

³ Cf. *supra*, part I, ch. viii, c.

⁴ Qur'ān, 8: 39.

⁵ Tirmidhī bk. *Faḍā'il al-jihād*, ch. من يقاتل رياء و للدنيا :-
"سئل رسول الله عن الرجل يقاتل شجاعة و يقاتل حية و يقاتل رياء فأى ذلك في سبيل الله؟ قال من قاتل لتكون كلمة الله هي العليا"

⁶ Al-Kāsanī, بدائع الصنائع, VII 99, Cf. also Bukhārī, etc.
ولو امر عليكم حبشى اجدع .

⁷ Cf. Qur'ān, 4: 59, "و اولى الامر منكم".

the Will of God," religion of which they were not the monopolisers but which was open to all the nations to embrace and become equals.¹ In a word, the Muslim aim was to spread Islamic civilisation and to realise a universal *Polity* based on the equality of the Faithful and a system which provided the basic necessities of all the needy in the country, irrespective of religion, without in the least impairing private enterprise (cf. Qur'ān, 9 : 60, 8 : 41).

Yet this did not mean that in the meanwhile they acknowledged no rights to people outside their jurisdiction. The Qur'ān enjoins peace with those who do not want to fight;² the scrupulous respect of treaties concluded with non-Muslims,³ and is emphatic on the point that the world belongs to God and He gives His vicegerency to whomever He wills.⁴

State.

States have existed in human society since time immemorial, and not much has changed in the essentials of their functions ; and the state officials, from the head to the lowest, have proportionately exercised more or less authority over the commoners and even the lower state-officials in their private capacity. The question of the origin of authority, however, is a disputed question in different schools of thought. Some trace it to the collective will of the political group. some claim Divine descent or even Divine incarnation.

So far as Islam is concerned, the classical authors have been unanimous that it is a delegation of Divine authority, through the intermediary link of the Messengers or

¹ Qur'ān, 4 : 123, 49 : 10, 3 : 103; etc. Cf. also the oration of the Prophet at the Last Pilgrimage in the year 10 H. in *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 968-70; *Ya'qūbiy*, II, 122-23 ; *Jāhiz* البيان والتبيين , II, 24 f.

² Qur'ān, 8 : 61.

³ *Idem*, 4 : 90, 4 : 92, 8 : 72, 17 : 34, 23 : 8, 70 : 32, 2 : 177, 3 : 76, 5 : 1, 9 : 7.

⁴ *Idem*, 3 : 26, 6 : 134, 11 : 57, 24 : 55; etc.

Prophets who receive Divine revelation. It may be called a theocracy. A few typical quotations from the Qur'ān will elucidate the point :—

(a) Lo! the earth is God's. He giveth it for an inheritance to whom He will. (7 : 128)

(b) And when thy Lord said unto the angels : Lo! I am about to place a viceroy in the earth. (2 : 30)

(c) [And God said unto him :] O David! Lo! We have set thee as a viceroy in the earth ; therefore judge aright between mankind and follow not desire that it beguile thee from the way of God. (38 : 27)

(d) Say : O God! Owner of Sovereignty (*mulk*)! Thou givest sovereignty unto whom Thou wilt, and Thou withdrawest sovereignty from whom Thou wilt. Thou exaltest whom Thou wilt, and Thou abasest whom Thou wilt. In Thy hand is the good. Lo! Thou art Able to do all things. (3 : 26)

And scores of other verses, supported by the sayings of the Prophet¹ and Orthodox Practice, all tend to the fact that God is the King of the earth and beyond, and He delegates authority, for administration in trust, to man ; and man wields power at His will.

As already remarked, states have existed before the philosophers and political scientists. I need not dilate on the minute discussions of what is a state, according to Muslim scholars, what are the essentials of the *Khilāfat* or the vicegerency of God, and allied questions which might more appropriately be discussed in the history of Muslim political thought. Here it suffices to emphasise two points, (1) acknowledgement of more than one independent state at a time and (2) acknowledgement of more Muslim states than one.

Radīyud-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy records the opinion of

¹ For instance, السلطان ظل الله في الارض cited by Sarakhsīy, شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 15.

Abū-Yūsūf and ash-Shaibānī in the following words:—

لها: — الدار انما تنسب الى اهلها لثبوت يدهم القاهرة عليها
وقيام ولا يتهم المحافظة فيها (المكيط لرضى الدين السرخسى
خطية ولى الدين فى استانبول ورق ١٠٥ ب)

i.e. They both maintain: a territory is related to its people on account of their controlling hand over it and their establishing protective authority therein.

Regarding the second point, the diversity even of Muslim states, it is to be pointed out that, though essentially Muslims constitute but one "nation,"¹ still not all the Muslims ever lived in Islamic territory, strictly speaking. Even the Qur'ān refers to it several times:—

(a) "It is not for a believer to kill a believer unless it be by mistake. He who hath killed a believer by mistake, must set free a believing slave, and pay the blood-money to the family of the slain, unless they remit it as a charity. *If he (the victim) be of a people hostile unto you*, and he is a believer, then the penance is to set free a believing slave. *And, if he cometh forth of a folk between whom and you there is a covenant*, then the blood-money must be paid unto his folk and also a believing slave must be set free. And whoso hath not the wherewithal, must fast two consecutive months. A penance from God. God is Knower, Wise." (4: 92)

(b) "How should ye not fight for the cause of God and the feeble among men and women and the children who are crying: Our Lord! bring us forth from out this town of which the people are oppressors! Oh, give us from Thy presence some protecting friend! Oh, give us from Thy presence some defender!... They will ask: In what were ye engaged? They will say: We were oppressed in the land. They will retort:

¹ Cf. (*Ibn-Hishām*, p. 341), constitution of the Muslim State in the time of the Prophet, § 2: انهم امة واحدة من دون الناس

Was not God's earth spacious that ye could have migrated therein?" (4: 75, 97)

This question of minorities is so very old.¹ Apart from the Muslim minority in foreign countries, there was, however, in the beginning no possibility of having more than one Muslim state. When Islam spread far and wide, and the Muslims did not form a compact whole with continuous and contiguous frontiers, the division of Islamic territory into many states was inevitable. As a matter of fact, we have also to admit the division caused by civil wars and successful rebellions. So much so that even classical jurists had to acknowledge this fact. Ad-Dabūsīy (d. 430 H.), for instance, is very explicit on the point :—

لان الدارين في الاصل ما امتازا الا باجراء الاحكام وتنفيذ الولايات
و كذلك الولايات المختلفة في دارالاسلام بين ملوك الاسلام لا تمتاز
الا بالغلبة و اجراء الاحكام

i.e., The distinguishing factor between the Muslim and non-Muslim territories is the difference of authority and administration. *The same is true of the different principalities even within the Islamic territory which are distinguished from one another by the domination and the execution of authority (i.e. Jurisdiction)*².

With the downfall of the Umayyads, Spain became independent of the East. Later, during the decadence of the Abbasid Empire, its provincial governors became hereditary and virtually independent. They could wage war, make peace or conclude other treaties, without reference to the Caliph, and administer all their internal as well as external affairs at their own will. Their nominal allegiance

¹ See my article on Muslim colonisation, migration, repatriation and allied topics, in the time of the Prophet and his two successors, in the Hindustani quarterly, سياست, of Hyderabad, July 1940, under the heading *Hijrat*.

² Ad-Dabūsīy, كتاب الاسرار, fol. 151b, (MS. Waliuddin, Istanbul, No. 1402).

to the Caliph will be dealt with in a later chapter. We shall conclude with one more instance of a curious kind. It is recorded that the Caliph Hārūn ar-Rashīd created a buffer-state in North Africa, in a country where three realms met—the Abbasid Empire, the Idrisite Kingdom and the Umayyad Dominions of Spain ; and handed it over to the family of Aghlabites who exercised full independence with this exception that they recited the name of the Caliph of Baghdād in the Friday Sermons in cathedral mosques.¹

We have seen that an independent state must be immune from foreign intervention. It may briefly be dealt with.

Intervention.

Independence gives the *right* of immunity from external interference. But rights and obligations are correlated to each other. Immunity requires abstention also from intervening in others' affairs. Yet there are times when intervention is justified :

1. In self-defence.

2. In preventing an evil worse than meddling into others' affairs.

To intervene in self-defence may amount to retaliation or repudiation of the existing treaty for which sanction is forthcoming both in the Qur'ān² and the practice of the Prophet.³ It is sometimes difficult to distinguish between a punitive act and an intervention. Coercion or threat of coercion, naked or veiled, lies at the root of intervention ; and an unwilling submission on the part of the subject of intervention is necessary. Once some Christian subjects had fled from Muslim territory and taken

¹ Farīd Rifā'īy, *عصر المأمون*, I, 128 ff.

² Cf. for instance, 8: 56-58.

³ I refer to the conquest of Mecca as a direct sequence of Meccans, maltreatment of the allies of the Muslims. (*Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 802 ff. ; *Tabarīy, History*, I, 1621 ff. ; and other biographies of the Prophet.)

refuge in a Byzantine region. The Caliph 'Umar's intervention was the reason of their repatriation by the Byzantine Emperor.¹

Intervention on the ground of humanity, or *in the path of God*, as the Muslim authors call it, is not unknown ; it is even upheld as the very first duty of a Muslim :—

Ye are the best community that hath been raised up for mankind. Ye enjoin right conduct, and forbid indecency ; and ye believe in God.²

And let there be a people from among you who invite to do goodness, and enjoin right conduct and forbid indecency. Such are they who are successful.³

And several other verses. Of the sayings of the Prophet, I shall quote but one :—

Whoever from among you sees an indecency (*munkar*), let him change it by his hand ; if he cannot, let him do that by his tongue ; if he cannot, let him do that by his heart (through disapproval, prayer to God, etc.) but this last would testify to the extreme weakness of Faith.⁴

The basis of intervention, however, has been provided in the Quranic *dictum*, " discord is worse than slaughter " ⁵ and in the legal maxim يَخْتَارُ أَهْوَنَ الشَّرِّينِ (the lesser of two evils should be preferred.)⁶

Muslim jurisconsults maintain that intervention by a Muslim state even in another Muslim state is necessary if the latter sets aside some significant command of the *Shari'ah*.⁷ Public despising of the Orthodox Caliphs by some of the *Shi'ites*, was also one of the authorised grounds to the *Sunnīs* for intervention ; it was considered to amount

¹ Tabariy, I, 3508.

² Qur'an, 3; 110.

³ *Idem*, 3: 104.

⁴ *Sahih* of Muslim, I, 50.

⁵ Qur'an, 2: 191.

⁶ *مَجْلَةُ الْأَحْكَامِ الْعَدْلِيَّةِ* ch. I, maxims ; Sarakhsiyy, *شرح السير الكبير*, iv, 46 ; iii, 332, etc.

⁷ See any law compendium, ch. " Authorised grounds for waging war."

to apostasy.¹

We must distinguish between intervention on the one hand and protest, advice, good offices, mediation and arbitration on the other. Mere protest,² falling short of any active interference to rectify the act done, is but an expression of feeling. In advice,³ friendly suggestion is tendered in all good faith without any sanction behind it to carry it out. By good offices and mediation,⁴ we understand the act of maintaining contact with both the conflicting parties and providing them both with a means of negotiation and pacific settlement. In arbitration,⁵ both the conflicting parties place their case in the hands of a referee whose award they previously agree to execute. In none of them is there coercion or forceful carrying out of one's will which is so essential to intervention.

¹ فتاوى عالمگیری § Apostates.

² The attitude of the Prophet (Ṭabarī, *History* I, 1572) at the reception accorded to his letter and his envoy by the Emperor of Persia, may not amount to more than a mere protest and expression of disgust at the violation of international comity.

³ In modern times, there are more cases of this kind than in classical times.

⁴ For a case in the time of the Prophet, see Ṭabarī, *anno* 1, p. 1265; *Ibn Hishām*, p. 419.

⁵ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 669-70, 673 (Case of Quraizah);—*Dinawariy*, p. 196-99;—*Tabariy, History*, I, 3336-38 (case of 'Āliy and Mu'āwiyah).

CHAPTER III

Property

LIKE private individuals, states, too, may and do own property.

The first thing a state owns is territory. The relation of state with territory is so close that a state without definite territory is even inconceivable. Even the *de jure* rulers in exile possess defined territories to which they lay claim.

By territory is here meant not only the surface of the part of the earth over which a state exercises its jurisdiction, but what is below it and what is above it, comprising thus land, water and air. Obviously, in ancient times, when science had not developed so much, states laid claim over only so much of the creation of God as they could directly dominate. By the time Islam made its appearance, man had already conquered water as well as the subterranean treasures of nature such as minerals. Regarding air, there were neither aeroplanes nor radio broadcasts. Nevertheless the Arab jurists believed that everything above or below a territory belonged to it. It was thus that they prohibited the construction of private buildings over or below public bequests such as mosques, schools, etc.¹ With water we shall have to deal later on.

No doubt, the theocratic basis of Muslim polity denies a state absolute ownership—as distinguished from relative ownership or trusteeship for God—in territory; nevertheless for all practical purposes, there is no difference

¹ See any law compendium, ch. Waqf.

between the powers of a Muslim state and those of a state which does not believe in God, regarding its territory. In view of the ultimate ownership of God, it not only implies that the human ownership of a Muslim state should be a mere trusteeship and administratorship but also Divine origin of the rights of a sovereign. A sovereign authority is declared in the words of the Prophet as the "shadow of God", and whoever despises it, despises, so to say, God Himself.¹ It is to be noted, however, that in spite of this Divine appointment, the Muslim ruler is not a despot : he is, first of all, as much subject to the laws of the country, (the *Shari'at* itself having a Divine origin, and not vaguely but in concrete form of Qur'ān and Sunnah), as any other commoner from among his subjects ; further, the ruler is maintained in power by the collective might of the community ; he may even be deposed² by the community on the principle that the Hand of God is on the community (يد الله على الجماعة)³ and that the community cannot agree to a wrong (لا يجتمع امتى على الضلالة)⁴ or *vox populi vox dei*.

¹ Cf. *Tayālisīy*, No. 887 ; *Ibn Ḥanbal*, V. 42, 48 and especially 165.

² *Sarakhsīy*, الميسوط X, 93 :

و لا بى حنيفة... تحت يد امام المسلمين و يده يد جماعة المسلمين
 Kāsānīy : VII, 16: فهو الفرق بين العزل
 الخلافة راجعة الى اختيار اهل — *Ibn-Khaldūn*, Proleg. ch. 26: — والموت
 — *cf.* al-Ḥuṭai'ah (d. 30 H.) mourning on the murder of 'Umar :
 انت الامام الذى من بعد صاحبه التى اليك مقاليد النهى البشر
 لم يؤثر ك بها اذا قد موك لها لكن لا نفسهم كانت بك الأثر
 — *cf.* 'Alīy 'Abd ar-Rāziq, الاسلام و اصول الحكم (Cairo, 1343 H.) — *cf.*
 the curious opinion of Ḍirār-ibn-'Amr on the preference of non-
 Quraishites for the Caliphate, in Naubakhtīy's: فرق الشيعة p. 10.

³ *Tirmidhiy*, ch. فى الامام

⁴ *Ibid.*

Unlike other systems of jurisprudence where the individual owns property in lands as a delegated authority or trustee, all land of a territory being vested in the state, Islamic jurists have opined that every individual owner has the same Divine authority, and the supervising authority of the state is only a symbol or a manifestation of the collective authority of the community. Abū-Ḥanīfah, for instance, is reported to have said :

All parts of the Muslim territory are under the authority of the *Imām* (Ruler) of the Muslims, and his authority is the authority of the community of the Muslims.¹

We have seen that a state always owns territory²—details of which will be given presently—yet that is not all. A state may and always does own things other than territory, such as buildings, means of transport, money, stores, books, etc. International law applies to them in so far as their acquisition by one from another, through pacific or hostile methods, and their disposal are concerned.

But territory, that essence and cream of a state's property, requires further elucidation.

Boundaries.

Boundaries have always been a very difficult question to settle in international intercourse. They are defined through prescription as well as express treaties between the neighbouring states. If there is a river or lake on the frontier, the boundaries of the states will extend to meet each other in the middle of the water unless otherwise settled by prescription or express treaty.³

¹ as-Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 93.

² The derelict and unowned land also belongs to the state (*Amwāl* of Abū-'Ubad, § 674, 690.)

³ Muslim jurists recognise this regarding private property (*cf.* any

It is a general and admitted principle of Muslim law that water will be an appurtenant to adjoining land and not *vice versa*.¹ That is, a state which possesses a tract of land bounded by water, will *prima facie* be presumed to possess also the adjoining water—a lake for example; and not that the state which possesses water, is entitled to the proprietary rights of the adjoining land.

Open Sea.

Obviously open sea cannot be treated as ordinary water-course or lake. Early writers scarcely mention it in this connection. Post-classical jurists have a difference of opinion whether it should be considered as no-man's property or non-Muslim territory. In either case, they argue on the basis of control that could be exercised. Ibn-'Ābidīn, while describing the capture of Muslim property by the enemy and rendering it safe through taking it to their territory, analyses the opinions of different jurists on the subject:—

“...if they (*i.e.*, enemy) take it to the safety of their territory. The enemy territory includes the Salt Sea (Open Sea) and the like; for instance, a desert beyond which there is no Islamic territory. This opinion has been attributed to al-Ḥamawīy (d. 1098). Abus-Su'ūd, writing notes on the commentary of al-Ḥāmilīy's in verse, says that the surface of sea will be considered as non-Muslim territory. Ash-Sharanbilālīy (born 1069 H., author of *أغنية نوى*) (*الاحكام في بغية درالحكام*) records in his chapter on tithes that Sirāj ad-Dīn 'Umar ibn 'Alīy al-Kinānīy, known as the *Reader of Hidāyah*, was asked whether the Salt Sea would be considered as part of Muslim territory or

compendium under ch. *كتاب الشرب*). The same must apply to international cases.

¹ Cf. Kāsānīy, *بدائع* VI, 189-90; and others *in loco*.

non-Muslim territory? He replied: It belongs to neither category since none has control over it. Al-Ḥaṣḥafīy in his *الدر المنتقى* (compiled in 1080 as a commentary of *ملتنقى البحر* by Ibrāhīm al-Ḥalabīy) opines that the Salt Sea should be included in non-Muslim territory.¹ The same author mentions in another place²:

"The author of *النهر* says that all that appertains neither to Muslim territory nor to non-Muslim territory should be included in non-Muslim territory; for instance, the Salt Sea over which no one has control..... Apart from this, the Salt Sea will be treated as non-Muslim territory. So, if a non-Muslim subject of Muslim state goes thereto without permission, he will become a subject of non-Muslim state and his allegiance will be cut off. Again, if a subject of a non-Muslim state goes thereto and returns to Islamic territory before reaching home, the old permit will no longer be valid; his belongings will again be taxed."

It is clear from this discussion that the opinion of these jurists was based on the difficulty of exercising power over it with their small sailing boats. They admit implicitly that Muslim jurisdiction extends to what they can control. In later times the Turks, for instance, have exercised their jurisdiction over the Black Sea, and no Muslim jurists have denied the validity of it.

In connection with territorial waters, a saying of the Prophet, in quite general and all-embracing terms, may be referred to. He is reported to have laid down that "every land has its appurtenance forbidden [to other than the proprietor]" (انه صلى الله عليه وسلم جعل لكل ارض حرمها)³. The rule

¹ Ibn 'Ābidīn, *شرح المختار* III, 266-67.

² *Idem*, II, 423-24.

³ Abū-Yūsuf, *الخروج* p. 57; al-Kāsanīy, *بدائع الصنائع* VI, 195.

has been developed regarding municipal law so as to apply to wells, roads, waterways, canals, houses, etc.,¹ yet it does not seem to have been developed and worked out so as to apply to international law, more particularly to open sea. And probably there was then no need even. According to Muslim jurisprudence even the sea has been put into man's control :—

(a) It is God Who hath subjected the sea unto you, that the ships may sail therein at His command and that ye may seek [advantage unto yourselves through commerce, etc.] of His bounty and that ye may give [Him] thanks. And He hath subjected unto you whatever exists in the heavens and in the earth ; and therein are verily portends unto thinking folk.²

(b) And He it is Who hath constrained the sea to be of service that ye eat fresh meat from thence, and bring forth from thence ornaments which ye wear. And thou seest the ships ploughing it that ye may seek of His bounty and ye may give [Him] thanks.³

And if the Muslim state can snatch control over part of it from anybody else, it will become part of Muslim territory. However, it is to be noted that Muslim jurists have always made a distinction between what they consider of public utility and private utility. A thing of public utility cannot be given in monopoly to private individuals :

All the Muslims join in the utilisation of Tigris and Euphrates and any other big river like them or valley from which they water the soil or use for drinking purposes of man and beast...The maintenance of such big rivers and repairing their banks is on the public

¹ Abū-Yūsuf, *op. cit.*, p. 57.

² Qur'ān, 45 : 12-13.

³ Qur'ān, 16 : 14.

treasury. The big rivers are not like particular rivulets belonging to private persons where others cannot enter...Tigris and Euphrates are not like that, and anybody who likes to water his soil from them can do that at will; boats pass in them; right of pre-emption does not arise on account of mere joining in the utilisation of their water.¹

The Prophet himself prohibited more than once the giving in *jāgīr* (fief) of things in which there is common interest.²

International waterways and canals were contemplated in classical times, one even to join the Red Sea with the Mediterranean, though never undertaken for fear of strategic complications. I do not hesitate to maintain that, had they been projected and achieved, they would not have been different from ordinary canals and rivers, with full exercise of jurisdiction and proprietary rights and complete control over traffic. The famous canal from Cairo to the Red Sea constructed in the time of Caliph 'Umar, suggests to us the treatment that would have been meted out to it³ if it had been extended down to Farama⁴ near Port Sa'id. The canals and rivers and other waterways in Muslim territories were open to all peaceful traffic, and if foreigners brought anything from their country through waterways, they were taxed with the usual dues.⁵

¹ Abū Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, pp. 55-56.

² For one case cf. Ibn-Sa'd, I/2, p. 58 and Ibn-'Abd-al-Barr, *استيعاب* No. 3431; for another, Abū-'Ubaid, *كتاب الاموال* § 683, 693.

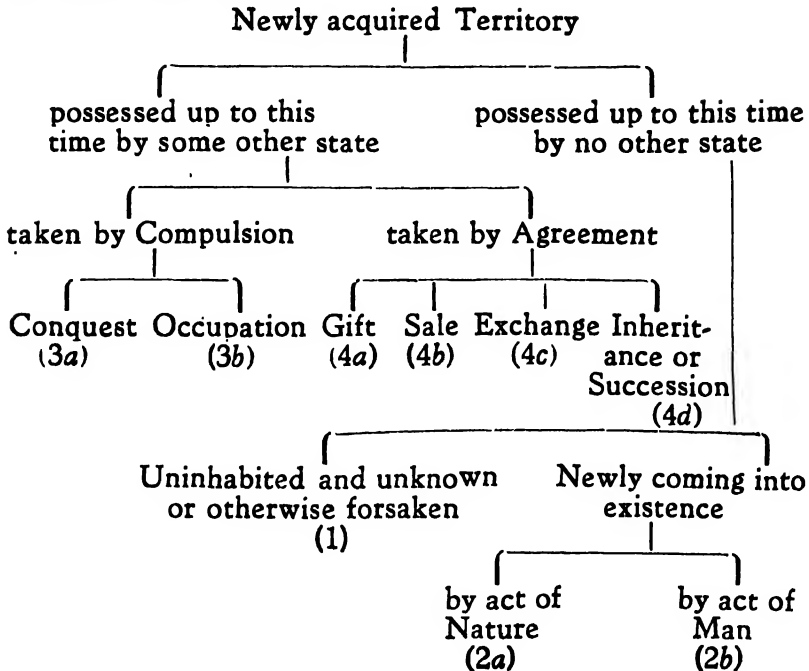
³ Ṭabarī, *History*, I, 2577; Suyūṭī, *Ḥusn al-muḥāḍarah*, ch. *Khalīj* amīr al-mu'minīn.

⁴ Cf., Mas'ūdī, *مروج الذهب* (ed. Egypt), I, 270; 'Abu'l-Fidā' *تقويم* p. 106.

⁵ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 78.

Modes of acquiring Territory.

Modes of acquiring new territory by a Muslim state may be divided as follows :—



(1) Territory not yet occupied by any state owing either to new discovery or for want of being cared for on account of its remoteness or some other reason, may be acquired by occupation. There is no case of this kind in early Muslim history except one when some Arabs reached a new and unknown island by stress of weather and afterwards related wonderful stories to the Prophet.¹ Annexation could obviously not be expected. In later travel literature, there are frequent references to discovery of new islands by those hardy Muslim sailors who dared undertake voyages from Persia and Egypt to China in tiny boats to the envy of

¹ *Ṣaḥīḥ* of Muslim, 52: 119-22.

modern navigators, but no instance of occupation is known to me. Even the discovery of America by the Arabs¹ has not left anything of interest from the point of view of international law except that colonisation had just begun. The history of Muslim occupation of the South Seas and the thousands of islands in Oceania is yet to be written to provide us with necessary data.

(2) Lands coming newly into existence may be of two kinds: those which came into being by act of nature, and those by act and art of man. In the former, we may include islands raised up by convulsion of earth or alluvial deposits of a river or even by the change of a river's course. Artificial reclamations of water-covered areas are old enough to be mentioned by Abū-Yūsuf.²

If natural accretion happens within the territorial limits of one state—the nearer half of a boundary river included—and has caused no damage to any other state, it requires no formal occupation in an international sense. If an island comes up in a place where the imaginary boundary line crosses through it, it must be proportionately divided and distributed between the neighbouring states concerned or otherwise the matters should be settled through treaty stipulations.

But if the natural accretion has happened at the expense of another state—as, for instance, through change of river's course—Muslim municipal law says³ that the accretion must go to the one in whose possession it has happened,

¹ Sulaimān Nadwī, *عرب اور امریکہ* (cf. the *Hindustānī* monthly *Ma'ārif*, A'zamgarh, March and April, 1939; *Islamic Culture*, July 1939, pp. 382-83).

² *Kharāj*, pp. 52-53 (ch. Islands in Tigris and Euphrates); Yaḥyā-ibn-Ādam al-Qurashīy, *Kharāj*, p. 15.

³ *شرح مجلة الاحكام العدلية* Vol. I, in *loco*.

yet he must pay compensation to the sufferer in proportion to his gain. This is based on the principle expressed in the maxims that "gain is with sufferance" (الغنى مع الغرم) and "injury must be removed" (الضرر يزال).¹ The Muslim jurists will apply the same rule to international disputes.

Yet if the changing of a river's course is so great that it has become a territorial river instead of a boundary river, the line of boundary must lie in its old bed, for :

Thy Lord bringeth to pass what He willeth and chooseth. They (*i.e.*, human beings) have never any choice. Glorified be God and exalted above all that they associate (with Him).²

And it becometh not a believing man or a believing woman, when God and His Messenger have decided an affair (for them), that they should after that claim anything in their affair ; and whoso is rebellious to God and His Messenger, he verily goeth astray in error manifest.³

There are many cases in Muslim history of a river's changing its course,⁴ 'Amūdaryā (Oxus), for example, but whether these events ever produced interstate complications I am unaware.

Artificial reclamation has nearly the same bearing. If it can be achieved without others' suffering in any way, no right of interference accrues to anybody. Otherwise, it will require previous settlement through express stipulation.

(3) Forcefully acquiring a territory possessed by some other state may be either through war and conquest or even mere occupation without encountering any resistance on

¹ مجلة الأحكام العدلية, ch. I, Maxims.

² Qur'an, 28 : 68.

³ Qur'an, 33 : 36.

⁴ Cf. *Encyclopædia of Islam*, s. v. Amu-Darya ; Barthold, *Turkistan*, in loco, (vide index thereto).

the part of the occupied. Mere conquest does not amount to annexation : it requires intention to annex. For it is possible that conquest and occupation were carried out on behalf of some allied and friendly state, or merely temporarily to compel the opponent state to mend some wrong. Secondly, it requires continuous and uninterrupted governance and the exercise of sovereign rights combined with firm possession.

(4) Territorial acquisition through mutual consent may either be through gift, exchange, sale or inheritance. Gifts, especially as dowries, have left many instances, at least in the history of Muslim India.¹ Exchange of territories has also occurred many a time² mostly for strengthening boundaries. An instance of sale is recorded during the reign of Caliph 'Umar II of the Umayyad dynasty, who purchased Malatīyah from the Byzantines, giving in exchange a hundred-thousand prisoners of war.³ A case of inheritance was provided for in the treaty of cession concluded between al-Ḥasan and Mu'āwiyah, by which the former handed over to the latter all his possessions on the condition that he should be declared heir-apparent to the whole dominions of the latter.⁴

Various Kinds of Territories under Power of a State.

¹ In the year 1564 the fort of Sholāpūr was handed over by Nizāmshāh to 'Ādilshāh.

² Abul-Fidā, *History*, (ed. Europe), III, 264, 464, 608 ; IV, 36, 56 . Tippu Sultan had offered the Turks to exchange Managalore for Baṣrah. (Cf. my paper in the first Deccan History Conference).

³ Abū-'Abdallāh Muḥammad-ibn-Salāmah-ibn-Ja'far,

عيون المعارف و قذون اخبار الخلائف (MS. Topkapusarai, Istanbul, No. 2791, copied in 748 from a MS. written in 422 H.), fol. 77a:—

”مهر بن عبدالعزیز . . و اشترى ملطية من الروم بمائة الف
اسير و بناها“

⁴ This clause of the treaty is recorded by few, Ṭabarī not included.

A state does not always exercise similar powers over all parts of its territory. A few instances will illustrate the point :

(a) *Regular Parts of Dominions and Condominiums.*

Every such part of the territory of a state is under its direct control, no matter whether possessed since antiquity or newly added, whether populated or waste, civilised or nomadic and even barbarous. A state may consist at the same time of all or several of these kinds of lands.

Abul-Fida records a case of condominium which lasted for a long time (فملكوا معامدة مديدة).¹

(b) *Tributary Independent States.*

For want of a better term, we mean by this the non-Muslim states from which a Muslim state received tribute, by the exercise of compulsion. This does not involve protection by the Muslim state of the tributary state against aggression of third powers, but it secures itself from attack on the part of the Muslim state. Apart from this obligation of tribute, the non-Muslim state remains completely independent, the tribute symbolising only a sort of inferiority and weakness. Thus, for instance, Theodomir agreed to pay yearly tribute to the Arab conquerors of the first century of Hijrah while at the same time retained his independence.² So also under the Abbasid al-Manṣūr and all his successors down to al-Mu'taṣim, the Emperors of Constantinople paid tribute more or less regularly to Baghdād. Caliph al-Mahdī received tribute from the Empress Irene, and Hārūn ar-Rashīd not only received tribute but also capitation tax (*jizyah*) from the Emperor

¹ Abul-Fidā, *History*, under the year 588 A.H. Cf. also *supra*, § "Independence."

² Gibbon, *Decline and Fall*, V, 566; S. P. Scot, *Moorish Empire in Europe*, Urdu trans. I, 263,

Nicephorus and his family.¹ Yet in all such cases the internal and external autonomy of the tributary state did not suffer.

There is even a case of dual subjection to tribute. Caliph Mu'āwiyah subjugated Cyprus and concluded peace on the condition that Cyprus should yearly pay a certain tribute notwithstanding the fact that it also paid tribute to the Byzantine emperor. It was further stipulated that the people of Cyprus should remain sincere and well-wishers of the Muslims and should keep them informed of the movements of the Byzantine.²

(c) *Nominally Dependent.*

By this we mean the Muslim independent states which came into being when the authority of the Abbasid Caliphs could not exert itself. We may include in this category even the Spanish states until 'Abd-ar-Rahmān an-Nāṣir assumed the title of the "Commander of the Faithful,"³ reserved for only one person at a time for the whole of the Muslim world. More pre-eminently this is true of the states in the East. They were originally provinces of the empire of the Caliph, and had gradually become independent, so much so that they gave birth to dynasties of rulers. In spite of full independence that they enjoyed, they publicly acknowledged their allegiance to the Caliph of Baghdād in the weekly Friday sermons in the cathedral mosques and also at the two yearly 'Īd festivals.⁴ Often the

¹ Gibbon, *Decline and Fall*, VI, 39-40; Farīd Rifā'īy, *عصر المأمون* I, 129; Shibli, *المأمون*, ch. Contemporary States.

² Abū-'Ubad, *كتاب الاموال*, § 467; Balādhurīy, *فتوح* § Cyprus, cf. Ibn al-Athīr, III, 74-75, 107.

³ "In the beginning they were styled as *خلائف* and not *خلفاء*" cf. Mas'ūdīy, *Murūj*, (ed. Egypt), I, 70.

⁴ Ibn Hawqal, *المسالك والممالك*, pp. 227-28; Ibn-Jubair, *رحلة*, pp. 50-51.

name of the Caliph was struck on the coins of these states.¹ The succession was for long considered incomplete without the charter or letter-patent of the Caliph.² The titles of honour were jealously and eagerly sought after.³ This is true not only of the provinces of the Caliphate which became independent but also of the Muslim states founded and conquered by private individuals at their own initiative, and nevertheless they believed themselves bound to pay homage to the Caliph, such as the states in India. To this list we may add the names of states whose sovereigns embraced Islam and paid homage to the Caliph; for instance, the King of Bulgars in the year 310 H.⁴ In all these cases the dependence, if at all we may term it so, was more personal and institutional than political and actual. It cannot, however, be denied that the Caliph did at times exercise a moral influence over the policies of these independent states, as for instance, in the year 757 H. the influence of the Caliph was sufficient to prevent Feroz Shāh, in such a far off country as India, from attacking Mahmūd Shāh Bahmanī who had obtained intercession of the Caliph in his favour somehow or other.⁵

History has recorded the curious and even paradoxical

¹ *Numismatic Chronicle*, 1885, pp. 215-27 coins of the dynasties of Ghulāmān, Tughlaq, Khiljī, Lūdhī, Jonpūr, Malwah, Bengal (بهمنی چھدر, II, of 924). Cf. also *Catalogue of Coins in Indian Museum*, Calcutta, Vol. II, published 1907, pp. 20 ff.; *Catalogue of Indian Coins in British Museum*, part "Muslim Countries," 1885, etc.

² Muḥammad Ḥabīb, *Sultān Maḥmūd of Ghaznī*, pp. 3-4.

³ Even by Sultān Maḥmūd of Ghaznī, *Siyāsatnāmah*, by Nizamulmulk, p. 132; etc.

⁴ Yāqūt, معجم البلدان s. v. Bulghār. Even Ibn-Fadlallāh gives in 764 H. the name of the ruler of Bulghār in the list of Muslim kings (cf. his التعريف بالمصطلح الشريف), *in loco*.

⁵ 'Abdal-Jabbār, معجوب الوطن p. 239. (It is a history of South India).

cases when some of these provincial, independent governors, sometimes even Shi'ahs, captured Baghdād, the very seat of the Caliphate, ruled over it as part of their territory and yet paid homage to the Caliph.¹ The Aiyūbid Ṣalāḥuddīn the Great was rightly and meritoriously given the proud title of "The Reviver of the Kingdom of the Commander of the Faithful" (مُحْيِي دَوْلَةِ أَمِيرِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ).²

(d) *Protected States.*

By this we mean those part-sovereign or non-sovereign states which obey the dictates of their protector in many matters of policy, being in return entitled to protection from the suzerain and protecting state. The protecting state exercises a certain amount of control, yet does not govern directly the protected country where the local prince continues to rule. The Prophet had addressed missionary letters to many a foreign prince in which this characteristic phrase occurred: "If you submit, I shall leave intact the power you exercise."³ Of those who were addressed in this way, the rulers of Bahrain and 'Umān accepted the Call, and the Prophet sent to their Courts *Residents* who exercised certain functions, had exclusive jurisdiction over the Muslims in those countries, and at the same time the local rulers retained their powers in the

¹ I refer to the Shi'ah Būhids and Sunni Saljucids.

² Ibn-Jubair, رحلته pp. 50-51; also an epigraphic monument on the southern side of the *Dome of the Rock* (قبة الصخرة) in Jerusalem, inscribed by Ṣalāḥuddīn the Great, visited by me in 1932.

³ With slight difference in the way of expression the same phrase was addressed to Mundhir-ibn-Sāwā of Bahrain, Hawdhah-ibn-'Aliy of Yamamah and Jaifar and 'Abd, both of 'Umān. The phrase "Submit and you will be safe," was also addressed to the Emperors Negus, Heracleus and Chosroes. For texts see my Arabic or French *Corpus* or Ibn-Ṭulūn, Ibn-Sa'd, Qalqashandiy, Ibn-Kathīr, etc. The expression "submit" (اسلم) may also mean *embrace Islam*.

residuary matters. In later history of Islam, however, there are innumerable instances of protectorates with varying grades of powers exercised by the suzerain power, in India as well as elsewhere.

(e) *Sphere of Influence.*

By this we understand a country which is marked by a state for future domination but, which it does not consider ripe enough for immediate annexation. In such cases, generally, there are either express or tacit agreements with other possible rivals who first disclaim any interest of theirs in the country concerned, and gradually all connections are severed between the sphere of influence and the rest of the world except the dominant state which at last occupies it at a proper time.

There is an instance of this kind in the history of India, probably not the only one of its kind:—

در سنة تسع و ثلاثين و تسع مائة در سرحد ملاقات دادند
و بعد از گفت و شنید بسیار چنان مقرر کردند که نظام شاه
مملکت برار و عادل شاه مملکت تلنگانه را مسخر ساخته دکن
را میان یکدیگر متساوی بخشش کنند

[In the year 939 H. they (*i.e.*, Nizām Shah and 'Ādil Shāh) met together on the frontier, and after much negotiation so decided that Nizām Shāh should subdue and annex the country of Berar, and Ādil Shāh the dominion of Telenganah, thus dividing Southern India equally between each other.]¹

The chief point agreed upon, in this treaty, was that one would not interfere if the other conquered the territory allotted to him and would recognise as the sphere of his influence and his interest.

Neutralisation and No-Man's Land.

That there exist tracts of land, especially on the frontiers, where neither of the neighbouring states exercises authority has been known to classical Muslim jurists. Thus, Raḍīy-ud-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy writes that a Muslim subject, temporarily residing in a belligerent state, may bring under his protection an enemy person to Muslim territory ; and such a person will be considered as *bona fide* resident alien, because, although the protection given by a Muslim, residing in belligerent country, is void, yet,

... انهما لما و صلا الى موضع فاصل بين الدارين لا يد لاحد
عليه فقد خرجا من منعة أهل الحرب وصبح أمان المسلم فيه اياها
وهي لاتصير مأخوذة بدار الاسلام مالم تصل الى موضع يامن
فيه المسلمون

[As soon as they have arrived at a place between the two territories, *where no one has authority*, they are relieved of the jurisdiction of the belligerent state, and the protection given her by the Muslim becomes valid and she cannot be taken prisoner under Muslim authority unless she had reached a place where the Muslims find themselves safe (*i.e.*, Muslim territory).]¹

CHAPTER IV

Jurisdiction

IN time of peace many *things* as well as *persons* come under the jurisdiction of a state :

1. Things :

- (a) Property of the Government as well as of its subjects situated within the territory of a state,
- (b) Property within territorial waters,
- (c) Ships, etc., belonging to the state or its subjects on open sea or in the air,
- (d) Embassies in foreign countries.

2. Persons :

- (a) Muslim subjects residing within the state,
- (b) Non-Muslim subjects within the state,
- (c) Subjects residing temporarily in a foreign country,
- (d) Citizens of one Muslim State in another,
- (e) Muslim citizens of a non-Muslim State,
- (f) Resident aliens in Muslim territory.

The jurisdiction is not alike regarding each and every one of them.

THINGS

There is not much to say regarding *Things*. Cases arising regarding these *things* will be adjudicated by judges of the Muslim State according to Muslim law. We have dealt with the abnormal no-man's land in the previous chapter. More on the non-Muslim subjects of the

Muslim State will be discussed in the following section, under *Persons*. Contracts, mortgages, etc., will also be dealt with there.

PERSONS

(a) *Muslim subjects at home.*

The first category of persons does not belong to our subject except in so far as the naturalisation of foreigners is concerned. According to the Qur'ānic principle that "The believers are naught else than brothers,"¹ it implies that as soon as a Muslim migrates from his non-Muslim home and comes to Islamic territory, with the intention of residing there, he at once becomes a full-fledged Muslim citizen of the Muslim State ; he has the same rights as the other Muslim citizens and the same obligations as they. We may refer in this connection to the oft-quoted instructions of the Prophet in which he commanded : "Ask them to embrace Islam. If they comply, molest them no more but ask them to migrate to the Territory of Migration. If they do that, they will have the same rights as the migrants (*i.e.*, Muslims) and same obligations as they. If they refuse to migrate, inform them that they will be considered like the wandering or non-resident Muslims كاعراب المسلمين. They will have, however, to observe the Divine laws even as all the believers ; they will not share the booty and spoils captured by the Muslim armies except when they come and join in fight along with them."²

I may refer to a rule which has some bearing on the question. If a Muslim travels abroad, he gets a concession regarding the length of his five daily services, yet if he

¹ Qur'ān, 49 : 10.

² *Ṣaḥīḥ* of Muslim, V, 139-40.

decides to stay in a place for fifteen days, he becomes a settled resident and the concession is withdrawn. This rule, called the rule of *qaṣr aṣ-ṣalāt*, is based on Qur'ānic verse¹ with many amplifications on the authority of the Prophet. I mean to emphasise that a foreign Muslim required originally only the intention of at least a fortnight's stay to become a settled and regular citizen. In quite recent times, however, geographic nationalities are making certain discriminations, and even the orthodox Sa'ūdian Arabia has promulgated laws as to how a foreign Muslim may acquire citizenship in her dominions. Prevalent international conditions have necessitated that.

(b) *Non-Muslim subjects at home.*

Muslim law has maintained a considerable distinction between Muslim and non-Muslim subjects. In many respects the latter are better off. They are exempt from the surplus property tax (*zakāt*)² which all the Muslims, male or female, young or old, pay every year at the rate of 2½ per cent. on their cash, commercial goods, herds of cattle, etc., above the minimum of about Hyderabadī Rs. 40 (£2-10). They are also exempt from conscription,³ whereas all Muslims are subject to compulsory military service. They enjoy a sort of autonomy : their cases are adjudicated by their co-religionists in accordance with their personal law.⁴ Their life and property is protected by the Muslim

¹ Qur'ān, 4 : 101. Cf. also Ṭabarīy, *Tafsīr*, regarding the same verse.

² Ash-Shaibānīy, *كتاب الأصل*, ch. *الصواع*, (MS. Aya Sofia No. 1076, Istanbul); 'Abdal-'Azīz-ibn-Muḥammad ar-Raḥabīy, *شرح كتاب يوسف*, fol. 247b (MS. Laleli No. 1609, Istanbul); Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 70.

³ Cf. Ṭabarīy, *History*, I, 2497, 2665.

⁴ Qur'ān, 5 : 44-48. For practice in the time of Caliph 'Umar, see *Dictionnaire d'Histoire et Géographie Ecclésiastique*, s. v. Antioche, Col. 594. For rights and duties of such communal chiefs of a later time see Ibn-Faḍlallah al-'Umarīy *التعريف بالمصطلح الشريف*, pp. 142-46.

State even as those of the Muslim subjects.¹ In return for all this, they are required to pay annually from 12 to 48 drachmas (about two to eight rupees) per head, with several exceptions as under :

“ The capitation tax is exacted only from males. Women and minors are exempted. The rich have to pay 48 drachmas, the man with average means 24, and the one practising handicraft for livelihood, like the peasant, 12 only, which will be collected from them once a year. Instead of cash, they may pay the value ... Further the capitation tax is not exacted from the indigent محتاج who receive charities, nor from the blind who have no profession and do not work, nor from the chronically sick receiving charities, nor from the crippled—except those chronically sick and crippled and blind who are rich—nor from the monks in convents nor from the very old who can neither work nor have wealth, nor from the lunatic . . . And, O Commander of the Faithful ! May God help thee ! It is necessary that thou shouldst treat the *people who were protected* by thy Prophet and thy cousin Muḥammad (i.e., the non-Muslim subjects) with leniency, and inquirest about their conditions so that they are neither oppressed nor given trouble nor taxed beyond their capacity, nor anything of theirs is taken from them except with a duty encumbering them. For it is reported from the Messenger of God who said : ‘Whoever oppresseth a non-Muslim subject or taxeth him beyond his capacity, then I shall be a party to him.’ And the last words which the Caliph ‘Umar-ibn-al-Khaṭṭāb uttered at his death-bed, included the following : I exhort my successor regarding the treatment to be meted out to the

¹ Commands of the Prophet cited by Abū-Yūsuf, Kharāj, p. 71.

people protected by the Messenger of God (i.e., non-Muslim subjects). They should receive the fullest execution of their covenant, and their life and property should be defended even by going to war, and they should not be taxed beyond their capacity Once 'Umar passed along a street where somebody was asking for charity. He was old and blind. 'Umar tapped his shoulder from behind and said: From which community art thou? He replied: A Jew. He said: And what hath constrained thee to what I see thee in? He replied: I have to pay the capitation tax: I am poor; and I am old. At this 'Umar took him by the hand and led him to his own house and gave him something from his private coffers. Then he sent word to the cashier of the *Baitul-Māl* (State Treasury): Look at him and his like. By God! we should never be doing justice if we eat out his youth and leave him deserted in the old age. 'The government taxes are meant for the poor and the indigent' (Qur'ān, 9: 60)—the *poor* are the Muslims, and this one is an *indigent* from among the Scriptuaries. And 'Umar remitted the capitation tax from him and his like."¹

Again, slaves are also exempted from this tax.² If the non-Muslim subjects render military service, at their will, they are exempted from it during the years of active service.³ There are instances when this tax was remitted during a whole lifetime for meritorious public service, as, for instance, the Caliph 'Umar did when a non-Muslim subject helped in selecting the site for digging a canal from Cairo

¹ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, pp. 69-72.

² Ibn-Rushd, *بدایة المجتهد*, I, 371.

³ Tabarīy, *History*, I, 2497, 2665.

to Red Sea.¹

According to a will of the Prophet, non-Muslims are not to be permitted to settle in Arabia proper,² otherwise there are no restrictions on their movements and domiciles. If non-Muslim foreigners want to settle in Muslim territory permanently or for more than a year, they have to pay this "protection tax".

The law of the capitation tax was originally laid down by the Qur'an³ regarding the Scriptuaries (أهل الكتاب or أهل الذمة). This term is interpreted as applying to the Jews and the Christians. The Qur'an is silent in this connexion regarding other non-Islamic creeds. The practice of the Prophet⁴ and that of the Orthodox Caliphs⁵ has, however, decided that all non-Muslims may be tolerated as subjects. So 'Uthmān accepted capitation tax from Berbers and 'Abdulmalik from Lingayats and Brahmins of India. Abū-Hanīfah opines⁶ أهل الشرك كلهم ملة واحدة (all non-Muslims will be considered as one category). Ash-Shaibānī⁷ also remarked in similar terms الكفر ملة واحدة—although these remarks were made on occasions other than the discussion of capitation tax. As-Sarakhsīy, after a prolonged and scholarly discussion, concludes:

"It is clear from this that the mention of the Scriptuaries in the Qur'an is not to restrict the rule but only to show that capitation tax may be accepted from the Scriptuaries."

خليج ch. حسن المحاضرة في اخبار مصر والقاهرة، As-Suyūṭīy, أمير المؤمنين

² Cf. *supra*, part I, ch. vi, § 9. ³ Qur'an, 9:29.

⁴ As-Sarakhsīy, الميسوط, X, 119; Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 74ff; Ibn-Mājah, 17: 41; Tirmidhīy 19:31; Shāfi'īy, الأم, IV, 96. (Order regarding the Majūs, i.e., Parsis, and Berbers).

⁵ Cited by ash-Shaibānīy, الأصل, II, 141-42, (MSS Nos. 741-46 in Wafā'-Ātif, Istanbul).

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ الميسوط X, 119.

More explicit is Abū-Yūsuf :

" The capitation tax is accepted from all non-Muslims whether the Magians, the worshippers of idols or fire or stones, the Sabeans, the Samaritans, except the apostates from Islam and the idolaters of Arab origin."¹

Naturalisation through Application.—If some foreigners come to Islamic territory and apply for naturalisation, the authorities may grant the request. In the time of Badr-ud-Dīn Ibn-Jumā'ah, when non-Muslims were granted naturalisation, there was a special register in which entries were made as to their names, distinguishing features, age, and religion ; monitors (عريف) were appointed from among them to control their affairs and take notice of deaths, travels, returns from abroad, reaching the age of majority, and also to attend them at the time of the annual capitation tax.²

There does not seem to be any probation period suggested by jurists, yet obviously it lay with the government to decide whether to grant the request for naturalisation or to reject it just in the same way as it lay with the government to grant temporary permits of sojourn.

Naturalisation through Marriage.—According to Islam, a wife acquires the citizenship of the country of her husband.³ Thus, if a non-Muslim alien girl marries a Muslim or even a non-Muslim *subject* of the Islamic state, she becomes a subject of the Muslim state. The same is the case if an alien couple come to Islamic territory and the husband acquires citizenship of the Muslim state, his wife also becomes a subject of the same state.⁴ Obviously, if a non-

¹ الخراج , p. 73.

² Badr-ud-Dīn Ibn Jumā'ah, تكملة الأحكام في تدبير أهل الإسلام, fol. 55a, ch. 17 (MS. Lāleli, Istanbul. The work has since been edited in the German Magazine, *Islamica*, Vol. VI).

³ As-Sarakhsīy, شرح السيرة الكبير, IV, 115ff.; al-Kasānīy, بدائع الصنائع, VII, 110.

⁴ As-Sarakhsīy, *ibid.*

Muslim alien marries a girl who is a subject of the Muslim state, he does not automatically become a Muslim subject.¹ His wife, however, would lose Muslim citizenship.

(c) *Muslims in Foreign Territories.*

Muslim law is intensely personal, and embraces all the acts of life, no matter where. We have seen in Section (a) of this chapter that the Prophet ordered the non-resident Muslims to observe Muslim law wherever they might be. Hence the *dictum* of Abū-Yūsuf² المسلم ملتزم احكام الاسلام حيث ما كان (a Muslim is to regulate his conduct according to laws of Islam wherever he may be). It goes without saying that this depends upon the liberty enjoyed in foreign countries.³ We shall return to this question presently. Yet it is to be said that although Muslim jurists insist so much on the personal character of their law, they make a sharp distinction between jurisdiction of a Muslim court and that of a foreign court over a Muslim, on the one hand, and moral obligations on the other; and they do not hold him responsible in a Muslim court for acts done in a foreign territory. And on the same basis, they acquit a foreign non-Muslim from all his acts committed in foreign territory even against a Muslim subject, such as murder or theft.⁴ Dealing with the question, as-Sarakhsīy says :

If a Muslim enters the territory of non-Muslims by their permission, and lends or borrows from them money, or usurps their property or his property is

¹ As-Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير IV, 115 ff.

² Cited by as-Sarakhsīy, المجسوط, X, 95.

³ According to the Qur'ān (cf. 12 : 75), Egypt, of the time of Joseph the Patriarch, administered justice to foreigners, even in criminal cases, according to their own personal laws (and hence the enslaving of Benjamin on the authority of (من وجد في رحله فهو جزاءه كذلك ذبح في الظالمين).

⁴ *Mabsūṭ* of as-Sarakhsīy, X, 95.

usurped there, his case will not be heard (in the court of the Muslim territory), because they did that in a place outside Muslim jurisdiction. As for the Muslim who usurped their property after guaranteeing them not to do that, we hold this because he violated *his* pledge, not the pledge of the Muslim ruler. Nevertheless, jurisconsults will advise him to return the property though the Muslim court will not compel him to do that. And as for the foreigners in their homes who usurped the property of the Muslim, we hold this because they violated their pledge in a place where they were not under the Muslim jurisdiction. So, if they kill him, they will not be held responsible. If they destroy his property or usurp it, the same holds good in a pre-eminent degree. All this because the Muslim took the risk and exposed himself to that when he quitted the Muslim *resisting power* *منعة*, (i.e., jurisdiction). The same is true of monetary loans, if they come to Muslim territory.....If a Muslim has gone by permission to non-Muslim territory and destroyed there life or property, he will not be held responsible in the Muslim court if the other party comes to the Muslim territory. This is because had they committed the same against him, they would not have been held responsible in the Muslim court, on the principle that they were there not under Muslim jurisdiction. So he when he did that with them; yet it is improper (*مكروه*) for the Muslim under his religion to violate his pledge with them, for the violation of a pledge is forbidden (*حرام*), and the Prophet has said: Whoever violates a pledge, a flag will be hoisted over him on the Day of Judgment in order to point out that he was a traitor. It is on account of this that, when he violated with them his pledge and thus acquired some property and brought it over to Muslim territory, it

would not be desirable for another Muslim to purchase it if he knew the fact. For the acquisition was through evil means, and the purchase would be a persuasion to do the like again, and that is not proper for a Muslim. This is based on the tradition that al-Mughīrah-ibn-Shu'bah killed his companions and plundered them and brought their belongings to Madīnah, where he embraced Islam and asked the Prophet to treat the plunder as war booty and tax the fifth of it in favour of the public treasury. The Prophet said : As for thy conversion to Islam, we accept it ; but as for thy property, it was acquired by treachery, and we do not require that. This prohibition to purchase is not absolute but only the purchase is improper."¹

In spite of the insistence of Muslim jurists on Muslims being bound by their own laws wherever they may find themselves, it cannot be denied that Muslims in foreign territories live there on sufferance and they are subject to twofold restrictions. Firstly, Muslim law itself reduces their legal capacity ; for instance, such a Muslim cannot give quarter, during his stay abroad, to a non-Muslim so as to bind the Muslim state, which he could do had he done that in the Muslim territory.² Secondly, such Muslims have to accommodate themselves to the laws of the country where they are living. This requires some discussion.

During the time of the Prophet, the Muslims had taken refuge for some years in Abyssinia. This was at a time when a Muslim state was not in existence, though at the time of their return from exile one such had been established in Madīnah. The historians inform us that the Muslims enjoyed in Abyssinia perfect freedom of conscience. The

¹ As-Sarakhsīy. *Mabsūṭ*, X, 95-97.

² *Idem*, p. 70.

Prophet had recommended that refuge saying that a just ruler governed there. The refugees testify to the fact that they worshipped there according to their rites, and celebrated daily services, and nobody maltreated them nor abused them by unpleasant words. The Negus refused the demand of the Meccan delegates for their extradition, and after hearing both sides assured the Muslims that they were safe in his territory.¹

On the other hand, during the same time of the Prophet the Byzantine governor of Ma'ān embraced Islam whereupon the Emperor ordered him to abjure his religion, and on his refusal beheaded him.² Muslim historians mention another case of a high church-dignitary who was lynched by the Byzantine mob on his declaration of embracing Islam.³

Cases of good or bad treatment of Muslim minorities in later epochs are innumerable, some of which we shall presently mention. From all these we come to the conclusion that it depended more on the whims of the rulers, in those days, than on any fixed rules based on reciprocity and consistency.

The question of Muslims in foreign countries had given rise to capitulations which require some description. But for want of precise data at present, we shall quote some passages of interest rather than deduce rules from them :

(1) In the year 31 H., a pact was concluded between the Muslims and the king of Nubia in which it was stipulated that no objection would be raised if Muslims visited his country or celebrated their services in the Mosque in

¹ Ibn-Sa'd, 1/1, p. 136; Ibn Hishām, p. 217ff., 716ff.; Tabariy, *History*, I. 1603; Ibn Ḥanbal, IV, 198; *Rivista degli Studi Orientali*, Vol. X (1923), pp. 90-98.

² Ibn Sa'd, Vol. 1/2, p. 31—Ibn Hishām, p. 958. For texts see my *Corpus*, or الوثائق السياسية

³ Tabariy, *History*, I 1567.

Dongola, his capital. Some provisions for extraditing criminals was also made in the treaty.¹

(2) In the time of al-Hajjāj-ibn-Yūsuf, when many Muslims fled from 'Irāq and wanted to take refuge in Malabar (India), the local chiefs required of them to wear local dress and observe local customs. Here is what we know about it :²

باعانت باد موافق و مخالف مختلف بنادر میں پہنچے
 ہنود اس نئی قوم کو دیکھکر اترنے میں مانع ہوئے۔ آخر میں
 نہایت عاجزی اور التجا کرنے کے بعد عہد و پیمان لے کر اترنے کی
 اجازت ملی۔ اولاً وہ بنادر میں قول و قرار نامہ دے کے
 فروکش ہوئے۔ اقرار نامہ اس بات کا تھا کہ ہنود کی طرز روش
 میں رہیں اور لباس بھی اس دیس کا اختیار کریں۔ غوبائے اسلام
 نے بامر لاچاری، بمصداق ضرب المثل ”جیسا دیس ویسا بھیس“
 ہنود کا لباس اختیار کیا اور اہل اصنام کے ساتھ مل جل کر
 شیر و شکر کی طرح رہنے لگے اور مقتضائے حال کے موافق ہر ایک نے
 پیشہ و حرفہ اختیار کیا اور کمال ہوشیاری سے زندگی بسر کرتے
 تھے۔ اور اسلامی شعار نہایت احتیاط سے ادا کرتے تھے۔ اذان و
 قرأت قرآن اس طرح پڑھتے تھے کہ کوئی فرد ہنود نہ سمجھ سکے۔

That is :—

[The persecuted Muslims] somehow or other, reached different ports [of South India]. The Hindus, seeing them of a different nationality, prevented them from landing. After long solicitude and humble petition, however, they let them settle in those ports. This was on the condition that they (the Muslims) would follow Hindu customs and would wear the costume of the

¹ Maqriziyy, *Kḥiṭaṭ*, ed. Bulaq I, 200, or my *Corpus*.

² *محبوب الوطن* by 'Abdul-Jabbār *Kḥhān*, p. 40.

country. The poor Muslims were constrained to accept the terms ; and "as the country, so the dress," they took to wearing Hindu costume. They took to different professions according to their conditions. They had to be very careful, and they observed extreme scruples [lest they be detected]. So they performed the *azān* (call to the religious service) and the recitation of the Qur'ān in a way that no Hindu could hear them.

(3) Muslims had penetrated in the very time of Caliph 'Umar into the seacoast of Bombay and Sindh.¹ When the Hindus recaptured Sindhān, they left the mosque in the possession of the Muslim population which did not evacuate the region, where it could hold its Friday service and even pray for the Caliph.²

(4) Mas'ūdīy visited India in the first decade of the fourth century of Hijra. He writes : In the year 304, I visited Ṣaimūr (modern *Chaul*) which is part of Lār (Gujrāt) and is ruled by Balharā. The name of the prince who ruled at that time was Chancha. There were about ten thousand Muslims, including the *Bayāsirah*, natives of Sīrāf, 'Umān, Baṣrah, Baghdād and other regions who had married there and settled there permanently. Among them were rich merchants like Mūsā-ibn-Ishāq as-Sandalūnīy who occupied at that time the post of *Hunermah*. . . . Hunermah signifies the post of the chief of the Muslims, for in this country the king appoints the most distinguished Muslim as the chief of the Muslim community, to whom he delegates all their affairs. By the term *Bayāsirah*, singular *baisar*, they mean

¹ Al-Balādhurīy, فتوح البلدان, ch "Conquest of Sindh"; Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far, كتاب الخراج, ch. "Conquest of Sindh" (MS. No. 1076, Köprülü, Istanbul).

² Qudāmah, *op. cit.*, last page of the Istanbul manuscript, ch. VII, section 19.

those who were born in India of Muslim parents.¹

The same author says : In the whole of Sindh and Hind, there is no king who respects Muslims more than the Balharā. Islam is strong and protected in his kingdom. There are petty mosques as well as cathedral mosques full of Muslims. Its rulers rule for forty and fifty years and even more, and the people of this country pretend that the length of the age of their kings was due to their justice and benevolence to Muslims.²

(5) Another very old author, the navigator Buzurg-ibn-Shahriyār (of the middle of the fourth century of Hijrah) mentions : Theft is generally punished in India by death. If the thief be a Muslim, he is adjudicated by the *Hunarman* of the Muslims who judges according to Muslim law. The *Hunarman* is like the Qādī in Muslim countries. He is selected from among the Muslims.³

The same author tells us that once a newcomer, a Muslim sailor, violated the sanctity of a temple in Şaimūr. One of the priests caught hold of his hand and took him before the king of Şaimūr and related to him the whole affair. The sailor confessed that he had done that. The king asked the people around him : What should we do with him ? Some said : Let him be trampled by elephants. Others said : Vivisect him. No, said the king, this is not permissible, since he is an Arab, and there are pacts between us and them. So one of you should go to al-'Abbās-ibn-Māhān, the *Hunarman* of the Muslims and ask him : What would you do if you found a man in similar conditions in a mosque ? And see what he says⁴ . . .

¹ *Murūj adh-Dhahab* (European ed.), II, 85-86.

² *Idem*, I, 382

³ *Merveilles de l'Inde* (معجائب الهند), pp. 160-61.

⁴ *Idem*, p. 143.

(6) Ibn-Hawqal, too, testifies to the same custom in India as well as in many other countries. He says : Nowadays it is a Muslim who governs them (*i.e.*, the Muslim colony) on behalf of the Balharā, who delegates to him the authority over them. This custom I have found in many other countries now under non-Muslim occupation, like Khazar, Sarīr, Lān, Ghānah and Kūghah. In all these countries the Muslim community does not accept that its chief, its judge and the witnesses in its disputes be anyone except Muslims, this even when their number is very small. In some of these countries I found Muslims who presented sometimes trustworthy non-Muslim witnesses. If the other party agrees to it, their evidence is relied upon ; if not, they are replaced by Muslim witnesses.¹

(7) Malabar had had contact with Arabs of even pre-Islamic days. Muslim colonies of the South Indian seacoast date back to the days of the Companions of the Prophet.² Malabar did not change much during the long centuries. A comparatively late author, of the time of Portuguese attacks, Zain-ud-Dīn al-Ma'barī, states : In the whole country of Malabar, there is no ruler for the Muslims of their own who should rule over them, but it is non-Muslims who rule over them, administer their affairs, and fine them when they commit some delict. In spite of that, the Muslims enjoy among the people of this country great respect and power, for it is mostly on account of them that their cities flourish. The Muslims can hold Friday and 'Īd services. They (the local chiefs) pay the salaries of the Qādis and the Mu'ezzins, help in the enforcement of the rules of the Shari'ah among the Muslims, and do not allow that Friday service be suspended ; and if anybody tries to

¹ Ibn-Hawqal, *المسالك والممالك*, pp. 227-28.

² *Revue des Etudes Islamiques* (1938), p. 104.

suspend it, they punish him and fine him,¹ in most cities. If any Muslim commits a crime which must be punished with death according to their laws, they behead him with the permission of the Muslim chiefs. Then the Muslims take possession of the dead body, bathe it in the ritual manner, clothe it with shrouds, celebrate the death-service over it and bury it in the graveyard of the Muslims. . . . They do not tax the Muslim merchants except the usual tithes, or the fines when they commit delict punishable with fines according to their laws. The agriculturists and horticulturists are not at all taxed even when they own big properties. They do not enter the houses of the Muslims without their permission, even to arrest a murderer, but surround his house and force him to surrender through constant vigilance and hunger and the like. They do not put obstacles in the way of conversion to Islam ; on the other hand, they pay the same respect to the new convert as to the other Muslims, even when the convert belonged to the lowest caste among them. In olden times, Muslim merchants used to subscribe for the help of such a one.²

(8) Regarding China, Mas'ūdīy mentions that once a Chinese official in Khānfū oppressed a Muslim merchant, who, trusting in the justice of the ruler of the country, went at once to the capital, put on the red uniform of complainants and attended the court. In due course he was presented before the monarch who, having ascertained the

¹ The writer of these lines witnessed similar conditions in 1939 in Aundh, a tiny Hindu (non-Muslim) State on the Western Ghats. There the Rāja functioned as the chief Qādī, and Muslims were fined by him if they neglected the congregational Friday service. For conditions in Cochin, etc., see Qādir Ḥusain Khān's article in the *Christian College Magazine*, Madras, Nov. & Dec. 1912, Jan. & Feb. 1913.

² تحفة المجاهدين في بعض اخبار الدتكالين (ed. Lisbon), pp. ٣٥-٣٦/32-33. (end of part iii).

story from several of his secret service officers, punished the official, and, bestowing on the Muslim merchant right royal gifts, told him : If thou likest, sell thy goods to us at bargain price ; otherwise thou hast the right of final decision regarding thy goods. So, stay if thou likest, sell as thou pleasest, and return in safety wherever thou intendest to go.¹

(9) Another author (of as early as the third century of Hijrah) is more explicit : The merchant Sulaimān reports that at Khānfū which is the rendezvous of merchants, a Muslim is charged by the ruler of the country to adjudicate the disputes that arise between the members of the Muslim community arriving in the country. Such was the desire of the king of China. On days of festival, this chief of the Muslims conducts the service of the Muslims, pronounces the sermon and prays for the Caliph (سلطان المسلمين) therein. The merchants of Irāq cannot rise against his decisions. And in fact he acts with justice in conformity with the Qur'ān and the precepts of Muslim law.²

(10) Regarding people near the Caspian Sea, Mas'ūdī records : In the country of Khazar, the Muslims are the elite because they constitute the army of the king. They are known there as Larshiah. They were immigrants from Khwarizm. Long ago, after their embracing Islam, a famine attacked their country and they migrated to Khazar. They are very fine soldiers and the king of Khazar trusts in their prowess in his wars. They have settled in his country on conditions they have contracted, viz., firstly, open profession of their religion and mosques and the service calls (adhān) ; secondly, selection of the minister

¹ *Murūj* (ed. Europe), I, 307-12.

² *Relations des Voyages du marchand Soleyman*, (سلسلة التواريخ) ed. Reinaud, pp. 13-14.

(vizier) from among them . . . ; thirdly, if the king of Khazar has to fight some Muslim power, they would not be employed ; else they would fight against any other nation. They provide the bodyguard of the king . . . They have Muslim Qādīs. In the capital of Khazar the custom is that there are seven judges, two Muslims, two Khazarites, two Christians, one for Slaves and Russians and all the rest of the Ignorant People. . . . If any difficult question arises, they all refer it to the Muslim judges and agree to what the Muslim law provides for it. . . . They have mosques in which there are Qur'ānic schools for children.¹

In general, Muslims temporarily residing in a foreign country are recommended very strongly, in Muslim literature of law and morals, to behave in an exemplary and law-abiding manner : to observe fully the conditions of their permit or passport and to refrain from any act of treachery. So much so that even if war has broken out between their local government and their home government, the Muslim subject must refrain, as long as he is staying in the enemy country, from warlike activities and treacherous deeds.² They must observe in all details the conditions of their passport ; and avoiding treachery and violation of pledge alone they may, if possible and practicable, remove the wrong done to their co-citizens.³ In one particular case, however, Muslim law is emphatic and urges the Muslims abroad to leave no stone unturned. It provides that if women and children of the subjects of the Muslim state, no matter whether Muslims or non-Muslims or even rebels, are captured by the state in whose territory the Muslim now resides, and these captives are brought into the country

¹ *Murūj* (ed. Europe) II, 10-12.

² *As-Sarakhsīy, Mabsūṭ*, X, 98.

³ *Ibid.*

where he is living, he is entitled, if he likes, to renounce, first, the protection of the local government and then fight in order to relieve women and children of his compatriots.¹ The greater importance of women and children lay obviously in the fact that slavery was rampant in those days and their apostatising was more greatly feared than that of grown-up soldiers. Still two points are to be reminded. Without previous notice of renouncing the protection of the permitting state, the act contemplated is not permissible. Secondly, the obligation to protect women and children is not confined to those of Muslims only ; it applies as emphatically to all the citizens of the Muslim state irrespective of creed and status.

Muslims abroad are not allowed to join forces with the local government against its foe, except in self-defence or when it is feared that the enemies of their protector state would not respect the neutrality of the resident Muslims.² In case of self-defence, there is no difference whether the state warring against the local government is non-Muslim or rebel-Muslim.³

(d) *Citizens of one Muslim State in another.*

We have seen above, under section (a), that all Muslims belong to one and the same nation. We have also seen that the division of Islam into several states, hostile at times, had to be admitted by jurists by force of facts.⁴ Very little is known, in classical times, of the special treatment reserved for such Muslims as go from one Muslim state to another. Therefore I quote the following interesting passage of Ibn-Jubair which is the only one I have come across so far :

¹ As-Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 98.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 97-98.

³ Ash-Shaibānīy, *الأصل*, in loco.

⁴ Cf. *supra*, ch. II, Independence, "States."

Between the old and new Cairo there is a mosque attributed to Abu'l-'Abbās Aḥmad-ibn-Ṭūlūn. It is an old mosque, with fine workmanship and grand structure. Sultān Ṣalāḥuddīn has allotted it as the boarding-house for the poor Maghāribah (i.e., people of Western North Africa) who live and study there. He has also sanctioned for them monthly bursaries. The most curious thing which I was told by one of them was that the Sultān has delegated the adjudication of their cases to them and nobody is to govern them. So, they have elected one of themselves and obey him and make him arbitrate in the disputes that may arise between them. They live in comfort and at ease.¹

There are, however, instances of individuals migrating from the Abbasid Empire, for instance, to Spain, and *vice versa*, scholars, traders and others, without any hardship and restriction or any privileges. The close watch on suspected spies is beyond our scope here. There are instances also of rulers sending special missions to purchase goods, manuscripts and the like. But they do not seem to have given rise to any legal arrangements for their treatment.

In our own times, owing to Europeanised conceptions of the policies of the Muslim states, there are provisions how to treat foreigners, and they apply to Muslims as well. We need not take notice of them, as they are not rules of Muslim law. In spite of all such rules, it cannot be denied, and my own personal experience testifies to it, that a foreign Muslim feels quite at home in any and every Muslim country of the world, and in private he is treated with the affection reserved for the nearest kin. Even government officials help him, in their private capacity, as much as they can.

¹ Ibn-Jubair ٢٢٣, p. 52 (Gibb Memorial Series, 2nd ed.).

(e) Muslim Citizens of a non-Muslim State.

So far as the practical implications of law are concerned, there is scarcely any difference between this category of foreign Muslims and the one just preceding. We have already seen in chapter 2 of this part, under *State*, that Muslim law recognises the existence of independent non-Muslim states in peaceful relations with the Muslim state, having a Muslim minority as their citizens. We have also seen there, in the Qur'ānic quotations given, how such a non-Muslim state is free to make laws for its Muslim citizens as it pleases, and the Muslim state has no right to interfere on behalf of its co-religionists. Accordingly, it will be the terms of passport which will apply if they come, for temporary purposes, to Islamic territory.

In the time of the Prophet, a treaty of peace and extradition was concluded between the Islamic state and the city-state of Mecca, and the Prophet returned all the Muslims who came to him to seek refuge, this in spite of the fact that he was fully convinced of the fact that the Muslim minority was subjected to unbearable hardships and persecution in Mecca.¹

(f) Resident Aliens in Muslim Territory.

Before we begin to discuss the general rules applicable to them, some preliminary remarks may be helpful in understanding the background against which they were originally set.

In the classical times of Islam, the law of passports seems to have been that the subjects of a state with which treaty relations existed (دار العهد) needed no extra permission from the Muslim state to enter its territory

¹ Tabariy, *History*, I, 1547ff., 1551ff.

(دارالاسلام) for a sojourn.¹ Again, those foreigners of third countries who were allowed to enter a state which was in treaty relations with the Muslims, could, further, safely enter Muslim territory.² In other words, friends of friends were also considered friends. Obviously this could not apply if the third state was at actual war (دارالحرب) with the Muslim state. In the absence of treaty relations, and non-existence of hostilities between his state and the Muslim state, the practice of the Prophet was to spare them unmolested if their *bona fides* were established, and a sort of posterior permit was granted. So, al-Bukhārī mentions that once a foreign non-Muslim came to Madīnah with a herd of sheep and goats, apparently without any previous permit. Not only that he was not molested, but even the Prophet bought a goat of him.³ There is mention of the arrival of Nabatean caravans to Madīnah in the time of the Prophet and afterwards,⁴ and obviously they came from beyond Muslim territory, either from Syria or Mesopotamia. If, however, a subject of a belligerent state entered Muslim territory without previous permit, he could be killed or enslaved or treated otherwise at the option of the authorities. The last also applied to his belongings. Needless to add that ambassadors have always been excepted from these rules. But this last category, the subjects of

¹ As-Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 133, *idem*, المبسوط, X, 89, referring to the classical case of Abū-Sufyān's journey to Madīnah during the truce of Ḥudaiḇiyah. But he came more as an envoy than in his private capacity.

² Al-Kāsānīy, بدائع الصنائع, VII, 109.

³ Bukhārīy, bk. البيوع مع المشركين ch. بيعه bk. اطعمة ch. من أكل حتى شبع

⁴ Mas'ūdīy, تذييله, p. 248. Abū-'Uḡaid, كتاب الاموال, § 1397; al-Qaṣṭallānīy, المواهب اللدنية, I, 223.

a belligerent state entering Muslim territory, will be dealt with more properly in Part iii of this monograph.

Moreover, to classical Muslim jurists, status of belligerency or friendliness is personal, not local. Thus, a subject of a friendly state found in a belligerent place on its conquest by the Muslims, provided that he did not take part in the hostilities against the Muslims and did not act contrary to his obligations of neutrality, was still safe "just like a non-Muslim subject of the Islamic state found in a belligerent territory when the Muslims conquered it."¹ And he must be allowed safe return.² If, however, such a friendly alien was brought there lawfully by the belligerent state, for instance, in the capacity of prisoner of war and was duly enslaved, he was to remain such.³

A passport could be annulled in the following cases:—

1. Expiration of the prescribed period.⁴

2. Breach of conditions expressly mentioned therein as annulling the permit,⁵ or implied as such in every permit.

3. Forged passport on discovery.⁶

4. Transmitting secrets of the Muslim state to the enemy.⁷ But the mere committing of criminal acts, even of murder, did not automatically bring the passport to an end. In such cases the criminal was to be tried and punished by a court of law.⁸

¹ Sarakhsīy, الميسوط, X., 89.

² Kāsānīy, بدائع الصنائع, VII, 110.

³ Sarakhsīy, الميسوط, X, 88; Kāsānīy, VII, 109; *Fatāwī 'Ālamgīriyāh*, p. 222.

⁴ Kāsānīy, VII, 110.

⁵ Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 226-27.

⁶ Cf. Sarakhsīy, الميسوط, X, 93.

⁷ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 117, cf. Raḍiyud-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy, المحيط fol. 361b. (MS Hyderabad State Library).

⁸ Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 226, محيط الرضى الدين, ماحيط السرخسى fol. 361b (MS Hyderabad).

Generally speaking, non-Muslim resident aliens and other visitors have been accorded by Muslim law the same status as non-Muslim subjects of the Muslim state. Ash-Shaibānī explicitly says :

"It is a principle (of Muslim law) that the sovereign of the Muslims has the obligation to protect foreigners coming with permission, as long as they are in our (Muslim) territory, and to do justice to them—this in the same way as he has an obligation regarding non-Muslim subjects."¹

A foreign visitor is under the jurisdiction of Muslim courts during his stay in Muslim territory,² yet he is free to indulge in certain acts penalised specially for the Muslims, such as intoxication. In this respect, however, there is some difference of opinion between Abū-Yūsuf and Ash-Shaibānī : the former maintaining that a foreigner would be subject to the whole of Muslim penal code with the one exception of wine-drinking, and the latter making a distinction between the infringement of what are called Rights of God (حقوق الله) and Rights of Men (حقوق العباد), holds that a foreign non-Muslim will not be punished except for what is against the rights of men, such as defamation, murder and the like.³

Ash-Shaibānī records :

" 'Aṭīah-ibn-Qais al-Kilābī reports, the Prophet has said : Whoever commits murder or fornication or theft (in our territory) and escapes, and then returns with permission, shall be tried and punished for what he wanted to escape from. Yet if he has committed murder, or fornication or theft in the territory of the enemy and

¹ Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, IV, 108, cf. p. 133 also.

² Sarakhsīy, *ibid.*

³ Cited, *ibid.*

came with permission, he will not be tried for what he committed in enemy territory.¹

Sarakhsīy adds :

" This is the basis for the savants of our school of thought to rely upon."

On this basis, not only a delict or crime against a subject of the Muslim state, whether Muslim or non-Muslim, but even against a subject of his own state falls under the juridical competency of the Muslim court.² Whether for certain such acts he should be tried according to local laws or according to the laws of his own country depends upon treaty stipulations. In short, a foreign visitor will be responsible to the Muslim court for all his acts during his stay in the Islamic territory, and not for acts committed outside the boundaries of the Muslim state, even if against a Muslim subject.³

A foreign visitor will have the right to bring a suit even against a local Muslim, in the Muslim court.⁴ According to classical Muslim jurists, this right is not forfeited by the outbreak of war between his country and the Muslim state where he is residing.⁵ This is valid even when Muslim residents are deprived of this right. For one's burden cannot be borne by others (Qur'ān, 6 : 165) and the Muslims must fulfil their promises.⁶

Litigations between foreign visitors and Muslim subjects regarding debts, securities, pledges and mortgages, inheritance, wills and the like, belong perhaps more appropriately to

¹ Cited *ibid.*

² Sarakhsīy, *شرح السیر الكبير*, IV, 109 ; Radīyūd-Dīn as-Sarakhsīy, *op. cit.*, ch. *Hukm'ul-musta'min*, fol. 601a (MS. Waliuddīn, Istanbul).

³ Sarakhsīy, *المبسوط*, X, 93.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ Kāsānīy, VII, 107, *ll.*, 15-16.

⁶ More on this in part III, War.

Private International Law or special treaties rather than to our subject.

Import customs and other taxes levied on foreigners or foreign goods may be governed by Municipal law as well as express treaties. Ash-Shaibānī, for instance, says, if the property of the minors or women of Muslim citizenship are exempt in a foreign country from customs duties, the subjects of that state will be similarly privileged in Muslim territory.¹

There is an aspect of the jurisdiction of non-Muslims, subjects as well as foreigners, which we shall describe in the following section, under "Special Privileges."

Extraordinary Cases in Jurisdiction.

As a general rule, a territory falls under the judicial competency of the state under whose dominions it lies. But there are exceptions and extraordinary cases which will be described immediately.

(1) Head of the State.

It cannot be denied that heads of states occupy a unique position within the realm, yet unlike many systems of law which declare that the king can do no wrong, Muslim law does not give this extreme immunity. Whatever the Muslim ruler does in his capacity of ruler, such as in the administration of justice, no suit may be instituted against him. On the other hand, if the ruler does a thing in his private capacity, he is as liable to be tried before an ordinary Muslim court as any other Muslim subject, for the rulers are as much subject to law as the citizens of a state. Thus it was that the Prophet heard cases against his proper person. In the time of the Caliphs, complaints were made in the court of the Qāḍī of the metropolis, and Abū-Bakr, 'Umar, 'Alī and many an Umayyad and Abbasid Caliph attended

¹ Ash-Shaibānī, الأصل, I, 150b, ch. *Zakāt* (MS. *Wafā-Āṭif*, Istanbul).

the court at the summons of the judges. On the same basis if the rulers had any private claim, they instituted a suit in the court and did not assume the position of judge as well as party to the case. Cases of the latter kind, however, are met with during the early classical times, the Orthodox Caliphate ; I have not come across such cases in later history of Islam.

As the subject is rather of unusual importance, I should like to give the details of the cases, in order that the reader may have a better perspective :

The Time of the Prophet.—All the following cases have been taken from the biography of the Prophet by ash-Sha'mīy,¹ chapter "His giving retaliation against his own person," if not otherwise stated :—

(a) Ibn 'Asākir records on the authority of Ḥabīb-ibn-Maslamah : Once the Prophet unintentionally injured the skin of a Bedouin, who claimed retaliation. Then the angel Gabriel came to him and said : O Muhammad ! Lo ! God hath not sent thee as either a tyrant or an arrogant. Whereupon the Prophet called upon the Bedouin and said : Take retaliation from me.

(b) Ibn-Ishāq records the following on the authority of a certain Companion of the Prophet who said : I pressed my way through on the day of Ḥunain, and on my feet were heavy sandals with which I trampled on the leg of the Prophet. He whipped me with a whip in his hand . . . The next morning he caused me to come and gave me eighty goats and said : Take this for that.

(c) Ibn-Ḥibbān records : On the day of Badr, the Prophet was inspecting his army, drawn up in files, and dressing the formation if anybody was not in his proper place. He had a baton in his hand with which he struck a soldier on the

¹ I have consulted the manuscript in the Qarawiyīn Mosque, Fās.

belly who had pushed a bit forward. The soldier complained and demanded retaliation. The Prophet raised his shirt and offered his belly for treatment in a like manner. (The story is also mentioned by Ibn-Hishām, p. 444).

(d) Ad-Dārimī, Ibn-Ḥumaid and 'Abd-ar-Razzāq record on the authority of Abū-Hurairah and Abū-Sa'id (al-Khudrī): Once there was an old man among the Meccan Muslims who wanted to have a private talk with the Prophet. The Prophet was about to start on an expedition. On the morning of the start, he mounted on his camel and wanted to go to the camp to lead the morning service before departure, when the old man stopped him and would not let him proceed before attending to him. The Prophet whipped him away and went. After the service, he turned to the assembly with a grave face and said: Where is the man whom I have just whipped?—and repeated it several times. The man was terrified and began to apologize but the Prophet said: Let him approach; and when he did so, he said: Take this same whip and take your revenge. He said: Impossible that I whip the Prophet of God! The Prophet said: Except that you forgive!

(e) Ibn-Ḥanbal, Abū-Dāwūd, and an-Nasa'ī record on the authority of Abū-Sa'id al-Khudrī who said: Once when the Prophet was distributing some booty, a man came and leaned upon him. He struck him with a baton in his hand and hurt his face. Whereupon the Messenger of God said: Stand up and take thy *talion*!

(f) Ibn-Qānī records on the authority of 'Abdallāh-ibn-Abī (? Abī-Umāmah) al-Bāhilī who said: I came to the Prophet during his last pilgrimage and saw him on his camel. I clasped and folded his leg with my arms. He whipped me I said: Talion! O Messenger of God. He handed me the whip whereupon I kissed his leg and foot.

(g) Muḥammad-ibn-'Umar al-Aslamī records: When

the Prophet was proceeding from Ṭā'if to al-Ja'irānah, Abū-Dahm was riding on his camel beside the Prophet and his sandal rubbed the leg of the Prophet and pained him. The Prophet said: "Thou hast hurt my leg. Withdraw thy foot." And he whipped my leg. Abū-Dahm says: I was terrified lest something should come in the Qur'ān regarding me and I should be scandalized. Although it was not my turn, I went to graze my camels that day, fearing lest he should call upon me. In the evening when I collected the beasts and went to the camp, people told me that the Prophet was inquiring after me. Trembling I went to him. He said: Thou didst pain me with thy leg and I whipped thee. So take these goats as a recompense for my blow. Abū-Dahm says: The pleasure of the Prophet was dearer to me than all the world and that therein is.

(h) In the closing days of his life the Prophet addressed a public gathering and said:

People! You may have had claims against me. If I have whipped anybody's back, let him retaliate on this my back. If I have condemned or censured anybody's honour, here is my honour to take revenge upon. If I have taken anybody's property, here is my property; let him take it, and let him not fear higgling on my part, as it is not my habit. In fact, dearest to me is the one who takes his claim from me if he has a right thereto, or forgives me. Thus I shall meet my Lord with clear conscience. A man rose and claimed that the Prophet had borrowed some money from him. This was at once paid to him.¹

(i) Al-Baihaqī, Ibn-Ḥibbān, aṭ-Ṭabarānī and Abū-Nu'aim record: Once Zaid-ibn-Sa'nah, a Jew, came to the

¹ Not quoted by ash-Sha'mīy, Cf. Ibn-al-Aṭhīr, *Kāmil*, II, 241; Ibn-Ḥanbal, *Musnad*, II, 317, III, 33; Ṭabarīy, *History*, I, 1801-02.

Prophet and claimed the immediate repayment of what the Prophet had borrowed from him, and came to strong words. 'Umar, who was present, could not tolerate it. But on his interference the Prophet remarked: 'Umar, you would better have advised him to claim in a proper way, and advised me to repay in a proper way.¹—This has the germs of a reference by the Prophet of his own affairs to a third arbiter. However, the position of the Prophet was unique, and to Muslims he was utterly incapable of committing injustice even when he himself was a party to the case. The Qur'ānic verses (such as 8 : 68, 80 : 1ff., etc.) which record Divine reprimand to the Prophet, testify to the same effect, signifying that God would correct him at once and not let him persist in error.

The Time of the Caliphs.—In the time of the Caliphs, immediately after the Prophet, however, the principle was acted upon that party and judge cannot be in one and the same person, not even the Caliph (ان الامام لا يكون قاضيا في حق نفسه)². Hence, whenever the Caliphs had any suit to file, or one was filed against them in their private capacity, the judge of the local court heard the case. Cases of this kind have been recorded concerning Abū-Bakr,³ 'Umar,⁴ 'Uthmān,⁵ 'Alīy,⁶ the 'Abbasid al-Manṣūr,⁷ the Spanish al-Ḥakam-ibn-Hishām-ibn-'Abd-ar-Raḥmān-ad-Dākhil,⁸ and others up to modern times, all testifying to the same effect. Their details fall out of our scope here. For certain cases and discussion see also al-Māwardīy *in loco*.

¹ Not in *ash-Sha'mīy*. I have quoted from *Shiblī*, سیرت النبی, II, 355-56 (2nd ed.).

² *Sarakhsīy, Mabsūt*, XVI, 73.

³ Ibn-Sa'd, 1/2, p. 97.

⁴ *Ibid.* *Sarakhsīy, Mabsūt*, XVI, 73-74; Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 65.

⁵ *Sarakhsīy, Mabsūt*, XVI, 74.

⁶ *Idem*, p. 122.

⁷ Al-Kindīy, *Wulāt Miṣr*, pp. 374ff.

⁸ Al-Maqqariy, نفیع الطیب, I, 557ff. (ed. Europe).

There is, of course, not the slightest doubt that when a person is a sovereign in his dominions and at the same time a citizen in others, he is subject to ordinary jurisdiction in the latter. The case of Jabalah-ibn-al-Aiham, the ruler of Ghassān, may be mentioned in this connection as a classical example. He was ordered by Caliph 'Umar in Mecca to conciliate a Bedouin whom he had hurt, otherwise retaliation would be taken upon him in the ordinary process.¹ There are, it is to be noted, some obscurities in this particular story, yet the principle holds good and is admitted without question.

(2) *Envoys and Ambassadors.*

These will be dealt with later in a separate chapter.

(3) *International Judges and Arbitrators.*

During the civil wars of the time of 'Alī and Mu'āwiyah, two arbitrators were appointed, one by each party. These arbiters were granted special privileges by both the belligerents, the least of which was protection of life and property. We shall revert to it in a later chapter.

(4) *Public Armed Forces.*

When armed forces enter a foreign country in hostility, obviously they are not under the local jurisdiction. But the question whether camps of such armies become for the time being a part of the territory of the state to which the army belonged, has been answered by Muslim jurists in the affirmative :—

(i) *Muslim Army:*

(a) " If the Caliph or the governor of Syria undertakes an expedition. . . his camp will be considered as Muslim

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 20 *Shibli*, الغاروق , II, 179 (*Life of 'Umar*).

territory."¹

(b) "If the Muslim army enters belligerent territory, the Muslim camp will be treated as Muslim territory."²

(c) "If they retort: Is it not that the slave embracing Islam and taking refuge in a Muslim camp becomes emancipated? And according to you the emancipation can take effect only in Islamic territory. We would reply: If the slave comes to that place when there is no Muslim camp, he will not get freed. He gets freed only when he takes refuge with the army. And the army possesses the requisite resisting power."³

(d) The Muslims are bound to protect the resident aliens in their territory. Hence, if some belligerents attack Muslim territory and take the resident aliens prisoners, "and pass by a place where the Muslims have a 'resistance' in enemy territory, it will be incumbent upon such Muslims to help the resident aliens and relieve them just in the same way as they would do had the prisoners been non-Muslim subjects of the Islamic state."⁴

(e) "*Army* affords the same protection as *Territory*."⁵

(ii) *Enemy Army.*

(a) "If an army of enemy infidels entered Muslim territory and a Muslim should go to them by permission and contract with them for some transaction, his case would be on the same footing as if he entered their territory. For a military camp possesses a resisting power. And Islamic jurisdiction does not run in their camp just as in their territory. . . Don't you see that if the Muslim army had entered enemy territory and the transaction had

¹ Kāsānīy, VII, 132.

² Dabūsīy, الأسرار, fol. 151b (MS. Waliuddīn, Istanbul).

³ *Idem*, fol. 143a.

⁴ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السبر الكبير, IV, 112.

⁵ Sarakhṣīy, المجسوط, X, 94.

taken place there, it would have been treated, as if it had taken place in the Muslim territory?"¹

But whether the entry into allied lands, with the permission of the allied state, will bring the army under local jurisdiction, is a question the definite answer of which cannot be given on the basis of classical evidence. In any case it would depend largely upon the terms of stipulation by which such armed forces are allowed to enter one's territory, whether they should be treated as ordinary resident aliens and visitors or should enjoy autonomous jurisdiction.

(5) *Neutralized Land and No Man's Land.*

This has been dealt with to a certain extent under the chapter on *Property*; and we shall further discuss it under part IV, *Neutrality*.

(6) *Special Privileges, Capitulations, Exterritoriality.*

For commercial and other purposes of mutual benefit, foreigners have, from time immemorial, been attracted and given special privileges and inducements. It is said that as early as the sixth century before Christ, Pharaoh Amases of Egypt granted to Greeks settling in the Nile Delta the right of adjudicating their disputes by their own judges, according to their own laws, without interference on the part of the local authorities.²

The Qur'ān commanded the same to Muslim rulers regarding non-Muslims.³ When the city-state of Madīnah was established with the Meccan Immigrants, Madīnite Arabs and Jews as constituting its confederal units, and with Muḥammad as the supreme chief, the Jews retained their

¹ Sārakhsīy, *السير الكبير*, IV, 132.

² Cf. *Zeitschrift der Akademie für Deutsches Recht*, Munich, (October, 1936), p. 944, "Die Fremdengerichtbarkeit in Ägypten," by Dr. Walter Simon

³ Qur'ān, 5: 43, 50, 66-69.

judicial autonomy except that Muḥammad was recognized as the final judge if and when they referred their cases to him at their option.¹ History records that in cases where the parties were Jewish and they appealed to the arbitration of the Prophet, he administered them their personal law.² A passage of the Qur'ān may be read with interest in this connection :

If then they have recourse unto thee (Muḥammad), judge between them or disclaim jurisdiction. If thou disclaimest jurisdiction, then they cannot harm thee at all. But, if thou judgest, judge between them with equity. Lo ! God loveth the equitable. How come they unto thee for judgment when they have the Torah, wherein God hath prescribed for them commands ? Yet even after that they turn away. Such folk are not believers. . . Say : O People of the Scripture ! Ye have naught (of guidance) till ye observe the Torah and the Gospel and that which was revealed unto you from your Lord (5 : 42-43, 68).

When the Christians of Najrān (Yaman) and Ailah ('Aqabah) and the Jews of Khaibar, Maqnā, etc., submitted to the Muslim state, the Prophet conceded to them judicial autonomy where the parties were of the same community. Of course when one of the parties to the litigation was Muslim, the case was tried by state courts and not by communal tribunals.

During the time of the Orthodox Caliphs, the system was further developed, and we read, for instance :

¹ For text of the constitution see *Ibn-Hishām* or my *Corpus*, No. 1, 42, 25.

² For one case see *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 393-95; *Abū-Dāwūd*, II, 152; *Bukhārī*, 61 : 26, 97 : 51; *Mas'ūdi*, *Tanbih*, p. 247, etc. For another case see *Abū-Dāwūd*, II, 161; *Ṭabari*, *Tafsīr*, V, 127; *Muslim*, 28 : 15ff.; *Bukhārī*, 44 : 1; Wensinck. *مفتاح كدور السنة* s.v. *قصاص*.

The most important innovation of the Muslims which the Jacobites most heartily welcomed, was that each religious community was recognized as an autonomous unit, and spiritual leaders of such communities were accorded temporal and judicial powers in considerable numbers.¹

Another contemporary evidence of the time when only 15 years had passed since the conquest of Syria, in the time of the Caliph 'Umar, is given by a Nestorian priest who wrote to a friend of his in the following terms :

These Tayites (i.e., Arabs) whom God has accorded domination in these days, have also become our masters ; but they do not combat the Christian religion at all ; on the other hand, they protect our faith, respect our priests, and saints and make donations to our churches and our convents.²

We possess greater details of the conditions prevailing during the 'Abbasid Caliphate.³ It was the same Qur'ānic principle acted upon all along, even when Sulṭān Muḥammad conceded some privileges when he conquered Constantinople, privileges later developed into the much abused capitulations in Turkey and elsewhere in Islamic countries.

(7) *Extradition.*

In spite of insistence by each state on its right to exercise jurisdiction over all that is situated within its territory, mutual interest often leads to the conclusion of treaties with other states for extraditing criminals. The extradition is

¹ Karalevski, in : *Dictionnaire d'Histoire et Géographie Écclésiastiques*, s.v. Antioche, col. 594.

² Assemani, *Bibl. Orient*, III, 2, p. xcvi ; De Goeje, *Mémoire sur la conquête de la Syrie*, p. 106 (2nd ed.).

³ Sée, for instance, the instructions issued to such communal chiefs at the time of their investiture, in Ibn-Faḍlallāh, *التعريف بالمصطلح*, الشريف and in al-Qalqashandī, *صبح الاغشى* in loco.

sometimes mutual and rarely one-sided. The earliest example of this latter kind is the pact of Ḥudaibiyah concluded by the Prophet with the city-state of Mecca in the year 6 H. whereby : "Whoever from among the Quraishites went to Muḥammad without permission of his superior (*mawlā*), Muḥammad shall extradite him to them ; yet whoever from among the partisans of Muḥammad went to the Quraishites, they will not extradite him."¹ Another classical example is that of the year 31 H., when a pact was concluded whereby the King of Nubians (Sūdān) accepted the condition that : "It will also be incumbent upon you to repulse towards the territory of Islam all fugitive slaves who come to you but who belong to Muslims. Further, you will repulse every Muslim combating Muslims and taking refuge with you. You shall return him from your territory towards the territory of the Muslims. You shall not incline to him nor protect him."²

For treaties of mutual extradition see al-Qalqashandīy.³

¹ For full text, *Ibn-Hishām* pp. 747-48 or my *Corpus*.

² For full text, al-Maqrīzīy, *Khīṭaṭ* (ed. Wiet), tome 3, partie 2, pp. 290-92 or my *Corpus*.

³ صبح الاعشى , XIV, 8, on the authority of al-Ghazzālīy.

CHAPTER V

Equality of Status

AS far as the rights of action accruing to and duties of performance binding upon states are concerned, Muslim jurisprudence recognizes equality between the various states. But apart from this rather theoretical equality of status, real equality between states has as much been wanting in states as in individual citizens. Titles in addressing different rulers, lavishness or frugality of hospitality and general treatment meted out to them, the power and influence exercised by them—in these and a host of other matters, equality cannot be observed.

For modes of addressing foreign rulers in the time of the Prophet see collections of his letters.¹ For later times, Ibn-Faḍlallāh's work *التعريف بالمصطلح الشريف* (764 H.), and later still the classical compendium of al-Qalqashandī, *صباح الاقصى* may be consulted with profit.

¹ My *Corpus des Traites* or *الوثائق السياسية* (Cairo, 1940-41).

CHAPTER VI

Diplomacy

INSTANCES of envoys temporarily sent to foreign Courts, and of secret agents posted in foreign countries, exist from time immemorial in human annals. Thus, no wonder if both these kinds of persons are found in Muslim history as early as the time of the Prophet. Apart from spies and scouts sent for military purposes, it is recorded that al-'Abbās was the secret agent of the Prophet in Mecca,¹ that Anas-ibn-Abi-Murthid-al-Ghanawīy was his agent in Awṭās² (near Ṭā'if), and that al-Mundhir-ibn-'Amr-as-Sā'idīy *alias* "A'naq liyamūt" (اعنق ليموت) was his agent" in Nejd³ keeping him informed of all that passed in those countries.

As self-sufficiency and self-dependence grew less and less, giving place to interdependence regarding necessities and luxuries of life, states were prompted to have greater international intercourse, commercial as well as political.

I have not yet made any profound study of the commercial agents in foreign countries. My tentative conclusion is that intrepid traders have been used to go to foreign countries before their own state had any diplomatic relations with them. In olden times, trade caravans used

¹ Ibn-'Abdal-Bar, الاستيعاب, No. 2034; Kattānīy, I, 363.

² Ibn-'Abdal-Bar, No. 20 (s.v. Unais); Kattānīy, *ibid.*, Ibn-Hajar, الاصابة, under Anas.

³ Mūsā-ibn-'Uqbah, كتاب المغازي (Fragment, Staatsbibliothek, Berlin, MS. 1554 PM30).

to stay in a country for longer periods than now. The local chiefs appointed what are known as the *Hunarian*, *Shahabandar* and *Malik-ut-tajjār* in order to regulate the affairs and disputes of foreign traders. These developed into European consuls, during the Crusades. And thus permanent commercial agents came into existence long before permanent political agents and envoys.

The Prophet himself took the initiative of giving impetus to trade and commerce even at the expense of state income. Thus it was that he abolished all inter-Provincial customs duties within the realm, and the many treaties concluded by him with tribes submitting to his authority expressly stipulate that.¹ Foreign trade, however, remained subject to the usual tithe or whatever percentage was stipulated for by express treaties and conventions between states.² The treaty for levying a tithe on the traders of Manbij (Hierapolis) is said to be the first of its kind in the time of 'Umar.³ The words *tariff* and *douane* or cognate words in European languages, borrowed from Arabic, have a history in themselves. There is an implied reference in the writings of ash-Shaibānī that sometimes the goods for trade belonging to minors or women were exempt in Islamic territories from customs duties.⁴ Again, goods of less value than 200 drachmas belonging to a person were customs-free.⁵ Abū-Yūsuf records an interesting correspondence exchanged between 'Umar and his governor, Abū-Mūsā-al-Ash'arī :

Al-Ash'arī wrote : Some traders of ours go to non-

¹ Cf. my *Corpus*, index s.v. "dimes, et exemption de."

² Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, pp. 78, 116 (and generally the whole chapter of *Tithe* in this work as well as any compendium of Muslim law).

³ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 78.

⁴ Ash-Shaibānī, *موسم*, I, fol. 150b, (MS. Wafā-Ātif, Istanbul).

⁵ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, pp. 76-77.

Muslim territory where they are subjected to tithes. 'Umar replied : Levy thou also on theirs as they levy on Muslim traders.¹

Although Abū-Yūsuf has known dumping and "famine on account of the excess of goods,"² he still believes in free trade, and quotes the injunctions of the Prophet not to interfere with prices.³

As for diplomatic relations and representations, we have mentioned that at first they were not maintained on a permanent basis. In his *A Short History of the Saracens*, Ameer 'Alī says, however :

"When the provincial governors became the feudatories of the empire, and the sovereignty of the Caliph dwindled into more or less effective suzerainty, the confidential messengers were turned into legates of the Pontiffs, and acted as his resident agents in the Courts of Nishāpūr, Merv, Mosul, Damascus, etc. Like the Papal legates, in the later mediæval times in Europe, they accompanied the sovereigns to whom they were accredited in their military marches. We find them not only in the camps of Alp Arsalān and Malik Shāh, but also in those of Nūr-ud-Dīn Maḥmūd and Saladin, ever active and sometimes meddlesome ; occasionally as under the later Ayūbids, reconciling contending princes, and settling fratricidal strifes . . . (Cf. Abul-Fidā, the Caliph's envoy settled the dispute between the sons of al-Malik al-Muẓaffar) , . .

"Each sovereign on his side maintained a commissary called Shahna [*read* : Shihnah] at the Pontifical Court, charged with the duty of keenly watching

¹ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 78.

² *Ibid.*, p. 28.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 28.

the moves of the game on the part of his rivals, for the struggle for predominating influence over the source of all legitimate authority was as great at Baghdād as in Papal Rome. *Shahnas* [read : *Shihnahs*] were usually stationed, besides the capital, in places like Wāsiṭ, Bussorah, Tikrīt, etc."¹

In an appendix, the same author says :

"The Abbaside sovereigns frequently employed a special envoy to transact confidential business with neighbouring potentates. The office was called the *Nizām-ul-Haḍratāin*."²

After the destruction of Baghdād by Mongols in 656 H., there is apparently another gap in the history of permanent embassies in Islamic countries ; there were no permanent ambassadors at that time even in Europe.

Reception of Envoys.

In the time of the Prophet, whenever a foreign envoy or delegation came, we find there was a sort of Master of Ceremonials who instructed the guests previous to their reception by the Prophet in the local formalities.³ The envoys sometimes disregarded them.⁴ There are many incidents in the time of 'Umar when the Muslim envoys disregarded certain local formalities in foreign courts, especially prostration, and caused umbrage.⁵

The Prophet, when in Madīnah, used to receive foreign envoys in the Great Mosque where the *استوانة الوفود* (Pillar of Embassies) still commemorates the place. The Prophet and his Companions are said to have usually put on fine

¹ *Ameer-'Alī*, pp. 407-08 (ed. 1921). ² *Ibid.*, p. 622.

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 916 ; Ṭabarīy, *History*, I, 1690.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ Cf. Ibn al-Aṭhīr, *Kāmil*, II, 359 ; Broomhall, *Islam in China*, p. 17, on the authority of Chinese sources, regarding the envoys of the commander, Qutaibah, in 713 A. Ch. to the Chinese Court

dress at the time of the ceremonial reception of envoys. A good example of the contrast of the simplicity of early times as against the grandeur of later times is provided by the Byzantine ambassador to 'Umar, whom he found sleeping on the ground in the sun unattended by any courtiers,¹ and the ambassador of the same empire at the court of al-Muqtadir Billāh, at Baghdād.²

Envoys generally presented gifts from their senders to the ruler to whose court they were accredited.³ Such things went to the state treasury. The wife of the Caliph 'Umar once received in return for her gift, a gift from the wife of the Emperor of Constantinople, but the Caliph likewise confiscated it in favour of the general exchequer, and only the value of the original gift of the Caliphine was given her.⁴ There are cases of the Prophet accepting the gifts of foreign potentates and using them in his official capacity—and there was no private capacity of his as is testified to by his dictum that he could not be inherited from, and whatever he possessed would go to the general exchequer.⁵

The envoys, too, received gifts from those to whom they were sent. The Prophet is recorded to have willed on his death-bed that his successor should award gifts to envoys as he himself used to during his lifetime.⁶ The Prophet once gave an envoy from 'Umān 500 drachmas, at another occasion gold and silver girdles, and at other times other

¹ كتاب في الجهاد والمغازي (MS. 4075, history, Cairo), fol. 113b.

² Al-Khaṭīb al-Baghdādīy, تاريخ بغداد, I, 100-05.

³ Sherūeh-ibn-Shahriyār ad-Dailmīy رياس الانس لعقلاء الانس (MS. 48 history, Cairo), fol. 39b ; Tirmidhiy, ch. قبول هدايا المشركين ; Tabariy, Hist., I. 2163 ; Again cf., presents from Muqawqis and Farwah to the Prophet.

⁴ Tabariy, History, I, 2822-23 Ibn-al-Athīr, Kāmil, III, 74.

⁵ Tabariy, History, I, 1826.

⁶ Bukhārīy, 56 ; 176 ; Kattānīy, I, 451.

things,¹ sometimes more, sometimes less, according to individual cases. It is generally admitted that, if a Muslim envoy received a gift on the part of foreign rulers, etc., that would go to the state coffers.²

The envoys are officially entertained. There were several large houses in Madinah, in the time of the Prophet, specially meant for foreign guests. There is often mention of the house of Ramlah-bint-al-Ḥārith in *Ibn-Sa'd*, in this connection.³ Another house was known as the Guests' House (دارالضيغان).⁴ No wonder when the Prophet took special pains personally to entertain the envoys of Abyssinia,⁵ for it was in this country that he had found a most friendly state even when he was in extreme danger in Mecca in the early days of his mission. Generally speaking, envoys were treated corresponding to their personal position and that of their sender.⁶

Privileges of Envoys.

Envoys, along with those who are in their company, enjoy full personal immunity: they must never be killed,⁷ nor be in any way molested or maltreated. Even if the envoy, or any of his company, is a criminal of the state to

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, pp. 40, 43, 66; Ṭabarī, *History*, I, 1574; Kattānī, I, 390.

² من محمد: هدية ملك, فتاوى عالمگیری, Vol. III, pp. 265, 66, أهل الحرب يصير فيهما للمسلمين. According to al-Marghīnānī (الذخيرة البرهانية) MS. Yanījāmi', Istanbul, ch. 18), however, envoys sometimes were allowed to appropriate what they received as gifts.

³ *Ibn-Sa'd*, ch. wufūd; Kattānī, I, 445ff.

⁴ Kattānī, I, 445.

⁵ 'Abd-al-Bāqī, الطراز المنقوش, pp. 45-46.

⁶ Hasan-ibn-'Abdallāh, آثار الأول في ترتيب الدول (compiled 708 H.)

كل رسول على مقدارة و مقدار مرسله

⁷ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 965; *Ibn-Hanbal*, I, 390, 91, 396, 404, 406; *Abū-Dāwūd* I, 275.

which he is sent, he may not be treated otherwise than as an envoy. The envoys of the impostor Musailimah provide good law to whom the Prophet had said: Had you not been envoys, I would have ordered you to be beheaded.¹

Envoys are accorded full freedom of prayer and religious rites. The Prophet allowed the delegation of the Christians of Najrān to celebrate their service in the very Mosque of the Prophet. Muslim historians mention as a curiosity that these Christians turned their faces towards the East and prayed.²

Envoys may only in extraordinary cases be detained or imprisoned³ So, the Prophet detained the plenipotentiaries of Mecca until the Muslim ambassador detained in Mecca returned safe to Ḥudaibīya where the Prophet was camping.⁴

The property of the envoys is exempt from import duties in Muslim territory⁵ if reciprocated.⁶ So, ash-Shaibānī says,⁷ if the foreign states exempt Muslim envoys from customs duties and other taxes, the envoys of such states will enjoy the same privileges in Muslim territory; otherwise they may, if the Muslim state so desire, be required to pay ordinary dues like foreign visitors.

Peaceful Settlement of International Differences.

The object of diplomacy is peaceful solution of inter-

¹ *Ibid.*, also Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 92.

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 402; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 85.

³ For a detailed discussion cf. Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, IV, 320.

⁴ Ḥalabīy, انسان العیون III, 26; Karāmat 'Alī, *Sirah*, ch. Ḥudaibīyah; Dahlan *Sirah*, II, 46 فأكبست قريش عثمان (رض) فأكبست صلعم سبيلا

⁵ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 116.

⁶ Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, IV, 67.

⁷ *Ibid.*

national questions and promotion of harmony between different states. It is immaterial whether the differences between states are legal or political or otherwise. We are concerned here only with the modes of their settlement, which are of various kinds :

1. The first and the simplest kind is mutual negotiation. This is done through permanent or special and extraordinary envoys. This need not be discussed in any detail.

2. Conciliation, mediation and good offices. By these different terms we understand third parties, friends to both the contending states, serving as channels for mutual negotiation and tendering friendly suggestions and advice to bring the disputants to an amicable settlement of their relations. Ibn-Hishām records that in the year 1 H. the first, or at least one of the first expeditions the Prophet despatched against the caravans belonging to the city-state of Mecca—then at war with Islam—was headed by Ḥamzah, who encountered the enemy near the seacoast of Yanbū'. Abū-Jahl was leading the enemy party. A fight was imminent but Majdīy-ibn-'Amr, who was an ally of both the states, Muslim as well as Meccan, intervened with mediations; and both the detachments parted from each other quietly.¹ We may also refer to the case of Ubaīy-ibn-Salūl, who although a Muslim subject, in his capacity as an old ally of the Jewish tribe of Qainuqā', interceded with the Prophet on their behalf, and the Prophet granted him his request.²

3. The third and the most important kind is arbitration. This means the determination of a difference between two states through the decision of one or more umpires chosen by the parties **حكمه تحكيميا: امره ان يحكم** **بينهم واجاز حكمه فيما بينهم**.³ The most important case in

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 419.

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 688; Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, 1491.

³ See lexicon *Tāj al-'urūs*, s.v. *taḥkīm*.

the time of the Prophet is the arbitration as to the treatment to be meted out to the Jewish tribes of Banū-Quraizah after their capitulation on the condition that a certain person should decide their lot. The Prophet accepted it, and carried out the arbitral award fully.¹ The famous arbitration between 'Alīy and Mu'āwiyah is another classical example, the document containing the terms of reference in this case having come down to us in *toto*.² The question was who should succeed to the Caliph 'Uthmān who had been murdered. 'Alīy being elected by the people of Madīnah, and Mu'āwiyah, who was governor of Syria, contending its validity and himself standing as a candidate. The arbitrators had agreed among themselves that both 'Alīy and Mu'āwiyah should be deposed, and that the Muslim community should elect a Caliph anew. Accordingly, at the fixed time and place the arbitrators came to deliver their award. First the nominee of 'Alīy pronounced that he deposed both 'Alīy and Mu'āwiyah so that a new Caliph might be elected and the Muslim community once more united. After him stood the arbitrator nominated by Mu'āwiyah, who said that the nominee of the other party had no right to decide except for his own client; and that he, the nominee of Mu'āwiyah, however, would not depose his client; on the other hand he confirmed him in his position. As the arbitrators had no agreed award, 'Alīy did not feel himself bound by the award and he did not abide by it.³ Civil wars would have again ensued had not 'Alīy been assassinated by an anarchist.⁴ In an interesting passage, Abū-

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 688-89; Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 124.

² For text see Tabarīy, *Hist.*, I, 3336-38; ad-Dīnawariy, *الاخبار الطوال* pp. 196-99; *الوثائق السياسية*; or my.

³ Cf. any Islamic History regarding events before 40 H.

⁴ Abul-Fidā', *Hist.* I, 364, *قيل كان على قبيل موته بايعه اربعون ألفا من عسكرة على الموت و اخذ في التجهز الى معاوية*

Yūsuf says what applies admirably to the case of Alīy :

If the parties agree on two arbitrators who differ in the award, it is void, except when both the parties agree to accept the award of one of them. If only one party agrees to the award of one of the arbitrators and not the other, the arbitration is void. If each of the parties agrees to the award of one of the arbitrators, the arbitration is void.¹

According to Abū-Yūsuf, the following categories of people are not fit to be selected as arbitrators, *viz.*, Muslims punished for scandalising respected ladies (قذف), minors, women, slaves, blind people, the immoral (فاسق), men of suspected or notoriously bad conduct (صاحب ريبة وشر), Muslims who are prisoners in the hands of the other party to arbitration, Muslim traders in the territory of the other party, Muslim subjects of the other non-Muslim party, be he in his own home or even in the Muslim camp.² According to our author an arbitrator must be :

انما يتخير في هذا و يقصد اهل الرأى والدين والفضل
والموضع من المسلمين و من كانت له حياطة على الدين. فاما من
لا تجوز شهادته..... فكيف يحكم في هذا .

[A man of insight in affairs, orthodoxy in religion, eminence and trust among the Muslims, and profound knowledge of law (*din* ?) is preferred and aimed at in this matter. And those whose evidence is not accepted in court, should not be selected to arbitrate in such affairs.]³

Abū-Yūsuf also maintains that a non-Muslim subject, too, is not eligible to the honour of arbitership, but his opinion has not found favour with other jurists. For

¹ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharaḥ* p. 124.

² *Ibid.*, p. 125-26.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 125.

al-Kāsānī¹ is explicit that a non-Muslim subject can be accepted as arbitrator, and the trend of his argument bears little doubt that, according to him, even neutral non-Muslims may be accepted as arbiters.

Abū-Yūsuf says² that awards to the effect of maintaining *status quo*, futile in themselves, are void and are equivalent to saying: We do not accept arbitership. So, too, awards for returning Muslims into the subjection of non-Muslims are void. He is so emphatic on the point that, according to him,³ if the other party to the arbitration had brought to the Muslim camp Muslim prisoners, slaves of Islamic faith, and Muslim subjects of the other non-Muslim party, these will not be allowed to return to the non-Muslim territory, for "the arbitral award does not allow the return of Muslims to belligerent and infidel territory." But his opinion is not shared by other jurists on the higher authority of the practice of the Prophet who expressly consented to return Muslims under the treaty of Ḥudaibīyah. If for the death of the arbitrators or disagreement between them, an arbitration fails, *status quo* must be restored and no undue advantage be taken of the other party's sense of security and consequent carelessness.⁴

¹ الصنائع, VII, 108.

² *Ibid.*, p. 126.

³ *Kharāj*, p. 124.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 124.

PART III

HOSTILE RELATIONS

CHAPTER I

Preliminary Remarks

A TRADITIONAL connection is traced between war and Islam by interested savants. It will be interesting to note what Islam has contributed to mitigate the horrors of war and make it more humane. The Prophet of Islam is reported to have said : "I am the prophet of mercy, I am the prophet of battle" (انا نبي الرحمة انا نبي الملاحمة)¹ And again : "I am the most valiant yet the most cheerful fighter" (إنا الضحوك القتال)² These two *obiter dicta* may be taken as striking the keynote of the whole Muslim law of war.

¹ Ibn-Taimīyah, السياسة الشرعية, p. 8; Dhahabī, التاريخ الكبير I, fol. 40. Cf. Ṭabarī, Hist. I, 1788, والملاحمة (نبي التوبة); Māwardī, الأحكام السلطانية, ch. IV : "بعثت مرفعة و مرحة".

² Ibn-Taimīyah, *ibid.*

CHAPTER II

Various Kinds of Hostile Relations

BEFORE we begin with the laws of war, it is to be noted that the hostile relations of two or more states do not always amount to war. More often than not they fall short of war ; and fighting and bloodshed, or at least, the mobilisation of the whole of the public forces of a state does not take place. These relations must be dealt with first.

1. *Reprisals.*

These signify a forcible mode of redress by which often a resort is made to the so-called *lex talionis*. Such are the seizure or destruction by one state of the property belonging to another state or its subjects, the detention of ambassadors, temporary occupation of the adversary's territory, and the like. In this connection the Qur'ān lays down :—

The forbidden things are reciprocal. So one who attacketh you, attack him in like manner as he attacked you and fear God. And know that God is with those who fear [Him]. (2 : 194).

The guerdon of an ill-deed is an ill the like thereof. But whoever pardoneth and amendeth, his wage is the affair of God. Lo ! He loveth not wrong-doers. And whoso defendeth himself after he hath suffered wrong,—for such, there is no way of blame against them. The way of blame is only against those who oppress mankind,

and wrongfully rebel in the earth. For such there is a painful doom. (42: 40-42. Cf. 10: 28, 40: 40).

The expedition of Mu'tah¹ was intended for similar purposes. The plenipotentiaries of the Quraish were detained, after the conclusion of the treaty of Ḥudaibiyyah,² on the same grounds. In later Islamic history such cases abound.

2. *Pacific Blockade.*

This means a blockade of the port or ports of the enemy and the preventing of all ingress or egress, but no bombardment. This blockade has for object the obtaining of redress. This is a later occurrence, and I could not find an earlier instance than 1866-68, when the Turks, during a rebellion, blockaded Crete and thus crushed the insurrection. The note of Muṣṭafā Pāshā may be referred to in this connection with profit.³

3. *Miscellanea*

In modern times, other kinds of hostile activities falling short of war are to be noted, for instance, the breaking off of diplomatic relations, postponement of the enforcing of treaties, economic pressure and a variety of other things.

Further, frontier incidents occurring from time to time, and skirmishes and clashes between the forces of states whose tense relations have not yet developed into actual war must also be classed in this category of relations

¹ Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, I, 1610; *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 791ff.; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, 92: Mas'ūdiy, *Tanbih*, 265. (The expedition of Mu'tah was in fact a reprisal for the assassination of a Muslim envoy by a Ghassānid chief.)

² Ḥalabīy, *Insān*, III, 26; Daḥlān, *Sirah*, II, 46.

³ Holland, *Studies in International Law*, p. 135.

CHAPTER III

Nature and Definition of War

I NEED not enter into any philosophical or historical discussion of war. It may, however, briefly be noted that Muslims, too, think of war only as unavoidable, not as desired or to be sought after. The Qur'ān says: "And if they incline to peace, incline thou also to it, and trust in God."¹ And again: "So do not falter, and invite to peace when ye are the uppermost. And God is with you, and He will not grudge (the reward of) your actions."² A Hadīth of the Prophet goes: "Do not be eager to meet the enemy, but ask God for safety. Yet if you meet them, persevere and have patience; and know that Paradise is under the shadows of swords."³ On another occasion, the Prophet said: "Do not be eager to meet the enemy, perhaps you may be put to test by them, but rather say: O God! Suffice for us, and keep their might away from us!"⁴

A later Muslim author strikes an interesting note by saying:

المروب هي العوارض من حوادث الزمان كالامراض كما ان
الامن والسلامة كالصحة للاجساد فيجب حفظ الصحة بالامور
السياسية ودفع المرض بالامور الحربية والاستغال بكفط الصحة .

¹ Qur'ān, 8:61.

² Qur'ān, 47:35.

³ Bukhārī, 56: 112, 156; 94: 8. Ṣaḥīḥ of Muslim, V, 143. Abū Dāwūd, 15: 89. Dārimī, 17: 6, Ibn-Hanbal, II, 400, 523; IV, 353.

⁴ Ibn-Qutaybah, 'Uyūn al-Akhbār, I, 107 (ch. Kitāb al-Ḥarb).

Wars are accidents among the happenings of the time, just like sicknesses, in contrast to peace and security, which resemble health for bodies. So it is necessary to preserve health by means of political action, and to shun sickness by means of warlike action, and to busy one's self in preserving health.¹

Definition of War.

An old Muslim jurisconsult, al-Kāsānīy, defines *jihād*, or the war of the Muslims, thus: *Jihād* in the technology of law is used for expending ability and power in fighting in the path of God by means of life, property, tongue and other than these."² The same thing is repeated in different words by practically all the later Muslim writers on Muslim law, but no one mentions in the definition who it is who will undertake a war; the public or the government? Incidentally, the question is answered in the course of other discussion. So the fact that the *jihād* is not considered as a personal duty (فرض عين) to be observed by each and every individual (cf. *فدولا نغر* the Qur'ān, 9: 122), but only a general duty (فرض كفاية) which, if accomplished by a sufficient number, the rest will no more be charged with the neglect of that duty,—this fact renders the administration of *jihād* entirely in the hands of the Government. The practice of the Prophet also shows that either he himself organised the expeditions or delegated its authority to responsible governors or tribal chieftains. (Cf. *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 954.) As for jurists, Abū-Yūsuf, the Chief Qāḍī of Hārūn-ar-Rashīd, says: No army marches without permission of the Caliph

¹ Ḥasan-ibn-'Abdallāh, آثار الاول في ترتيب الدول (compiled 708 H.), p. 167.

² بدائع الصنائع, VII, 97.

لا تسرى سرية بغير إذن الامام.¹ Al-Māwardīy is also clear about it that a war cannot be waged without permission of the Caliph (central government).² Defence of foreign aggression must naturally be excepted. As-Sarakhsīy, commenting on ash-Shaibānīy, goes even so far as to maintain that if a foreign armed force without permission of its government takes belligerent action against a Muslim State, that does not amount to a declaration or existence of war between the two states.³ In such cases redress may be obtained by diplomatic negotiations and even by direct methods as the occasion may require.

As all the acts of life of a Muslim are controlled by the Qur'ān, so everything he does with the intention of obeying his Lord are acts religiously held to be meritorious, even his eating and drinking—in order to preserve strength for performing his duties to God—or taking part in a war—in order to establish on earth the Kingdom of God. Without appreciating this background, it will not be easy to understand why even wars of expansion are to be considered as acts *in the path of God*. In a verse of the Qur'ān, often referred to, it is stated :—

Lo ! God hath bought from the believers their lives and their wealth because Paradise will be theirs : they shall fight in the path of God and shall slay and be slain. It is a promise which is binding on Him in the Torah and the Gospel and the Qur'ān, and who fulfilleth his covenant better than God ? Rejoice then in your bargain that ye have made, for that is the supreme triumph. (9 : 111).

¹ الخراج , p. 123.

² الاحكام السلطانية , p. 53.

³ شرح المسير الكبير , IV, 226. Cf. Kāsānīy, بدائع, VII, 109-10. Ibn-Farīshah, مجمع البحرين , ch. Jihād (my private manuscript). فتاوى عالمگیری ch. Jihād, pp. 221-22.

These and scores of other verses and Traditions of the Prophet render military service an obligatory duty of every Muslim. Ordinarily women and slaves are exempt, but if the rest of the man-power proves insufficient, even these are liable to active military service.¹ Regarding training and preparations in time of peace we read again in the Qur'ān :

And make ready for them all ye can of armed force and of horses tethered, that ye may dismay the enemy of God and your enemy and others beside them whom ye know not: God knoweth them. And whatsoever ye spend in the path of God, it will be repaid to you in full, and ye will not be wronged. And if they incline to peace, incline thou also to it, and trust in God. Lo ! He is the Hearer, the Knower. (8 : 60-61).

¹ *Fatāwī Tātār Khāniyah*, (my priv. MS.), ch. Jihād ; etc.

CHAPTER IV

Lawful Wars

THE lawful reasons for Muslims to wage war may fall into the following categories :

1. The Continuation of an Existing War.

By this we mean the recommencement of a war which has been stopped for some reason or other. The exhaustion of both the parties or separation of them without any treaty of peace,¹ the suspension of warlike activities by mutual agreement for fixed period,² and such other instances may be examples thereof. The Qur'ān lays down in this connection : "And when the months of immunity on account of the treaty of peace] have passed, slay the Associators wherever ye find them, and take them (captive) and besiege them, and prepare for them each ambush."³ Commenting on this verse, Sarakhsī says :—

And when the months of immunity have passed, slay the Associators wherever ye find them. And the meaning of the Qur'ānic expression : " When the months of immunity have passed " is that when the period of the truce with someone has ended.⁴

¹ Almost all the wars of the Prophet with the Meccans were of this kind.

² The peace treaty of Hudaibiyah provided for cessation of hostilities for ten years.

³ Qur'ān, 9 : 5.

⁴ والم د بقوله تعالى " فالذا انسلىخ الاشهر : I, 688, شرح السير الكبير الحرام " مضى مدة العهد الذى كان لبعضهم .

2. *Defensive.*

This can be either when the enemy (a) has invaded Muslim territory, or (b) has not actually so invaded, but has behaved in an unbearable manner. The former needs no elaborate discussion. The Qur'ān lays down : "Fight in the path of God against those who fight against you, but do not transgress. Lo ! God loveth not transgressors."¹ Regarding the high-handed behaviour of a foreign country, an interesting quotation will explain Muslim law on the point :—

Sanction is given unto those who are fought against because they have been wronged ; and God is indeed Able to give them victory.²

—This referred to the Prophet and other Muslims who had taken refuge in Madīnah and were still being harassed by the Meccans in many ways. They addressed, for instance, an ultimatum to a Madinite magnate, 'Abdullāh-ibn-Ubaīy, either to fight and kill or expel the Prophet, or they would attack Madīnah.³ Many traditions bear witness to the fact that in the early days after the migration of the Prophet, the Muslim community of Madīnah lived such a precarious life that they used to sleep in full war-kit.⁴ Another instance is provided by the expedition against Dūmatuljandal in the year 5 H., where the local chieftain, Ukaidir, was molesting the caravans coming from the north to Madīnah.⁵ The attack on Khaibar is an instance of nipping war in the bud.⁶

¹ Qur'ān, 2:190.

² Qur'ān, 22:39.

³ *Sunan* of Nasā'ī, II, 67, ch. Khābar Bani-an-Naḍir.

⁴ Bukhārī, Nasā'ī, Ḥākim, Dārimī, etc., quoted by Shiblī, سيرت النبي 2nd ed. I, 285-86.

⁵ Mas'ūdī, Tanbih, 248.

⁶ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, 66, 47. Ṭabarī, *Hist.*, I, 1556, 1575-76. Mas'ūdī, Tanbih, 250. Sarakhsī, Mabsūṭ, X, 86.

We may also refer here to the verse of the Qur'ān (9: 12): "Will ye not fight a folk who broke their solemn pledges, and purposed to drive out the Messenger, and did (attack) you first?" Further, an important and interesting saying of the Prophet enumerates the kinds of defensive wars, and says: "Whoever fights in defence of his person and is killed, he is a martyr (شهيد); whoever is killed in defence of his property, is a martyr; whoever fights in defence of his family and is killed, is a martyr; and whoever is killed for the cause of oGd, is a martyr." (Cf. Suyūṭī's alphabetical dictionary of traditions, جمع الجوامع, vol. 4, s.v. "من", on the authority of 'Abd-ar-Razzāq and others.)

3. *Sympathetic.*

By this we mean that were the Muslims of a foreign denomination to seek the help of the Muslim State against their (non-Muslim) government, help might be given them. The Qur'ān lays down in this connection that each case must be decided on its own merits:—

(a) And those who believe but have not left their homes, ye have no duty to protect till they leave their homes; but if they seek help from you in the matter of religion, then it is your duty to help (them) except against a folk between whom and you there is a treaty. God is Seer of what ye do. (8: 72).

(b) How should ye not fight for the cause of God and of the feeble among men and of the women and the children who are crying: Our Lord! Bring us forth out from this town of which the people are oppressors! Oh, give us from Thy Presence some protecting friend! Oh, give us from Thy Presence some defender! Those who believe do battle for the cause of God; and those who disbelieve do battle for the

cause of the Devil. (4 : 75-76).

4. Punitive.

The following causes constitute lawful reasons for waging war, viz., hypocrisy,¹ apostasy,² insisting on the non-binding character of *zakāt* or any other religious duty,³ rebellion,⁴ breaking of a covenant by the other party,⁵ becoming a *Khārijite*, because such people say that the generality of the Muslim community is hypocritical and take arms against the established government.⁶

5. Idealistic.

Every nation has its own ideals which constantly inspire it. The deeper a nation is convinced of them, the greater is its effort to realise them. As we have seen above, the Islamic conception of life is based on the Unity of God and the vicegerency of man on earth. This implies that all the Faithful are equal, irrespective of race and clime, and also that the Word of God should rule supreme in the world. It is this mission to uproot godlessness and association with God in His Divinity that is referred to in Islamic literature by the expression : " In the Path of God (في سبيل الله) " which we have translated as "Idealistic" reasons for waging war. Of the scores of Qur'ānic verses in this connection, a few may be quoted :—

¹ Qur'ān, 66 : 9.

² See *infra*, in a separate chapter.

³ The Caliph Abū-Bakr fought against them. There are *aḥādith* to support that, e.g., al-Baihaqīy in *Sunan al-Kubrā*, Vol. 7, ch. قتال الضرب امرت أن اقاتل الناس حتى يشهدوا : records : امرت أن لا اله الا الله و انى رسول الله و يقيموا الصلوة و يوتوا الزكاة فاذا فعلوا ذلك عصموا منى دماءهم و اموالهم و حسابهم على الله

⁴ Qur'ān, 49 : 9. Cf. also *infra*, separate chapter.

⁵ Qur'ān, 9 : 12. Cf. Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 65.

⁶ The Caliph 'Alīy fought against them, for whose interpretation of a tradition of the Prophet in his support cf. Sarakhsīy, مبسوط, X, 124.

(a) He it is Who hath sent His Messenger (i.e. Muḥammad) with the Guidance and the Religion of Truth that He may cause it to prevail over all religions, however much the associators may be averse. (9 : 33 repeated in 48 : 28, 61 : 9).

(b) Ye (i.e., the Muslims) are the best community that hath been raised up for mankind. Ye enjoin right conduct and forbid indecency, and ye believe in God. (3 : 110).

The same selfless Divine mission is most vividly described in an oft-quoted saying of the Prophet :—

Whoever from among you sees an indecency, he must change it by his hand ; if he cannot, he must do so by his tongue ; if he cannot, he must do so by his heart (through disapproval, etc.) but this last would testify to the extreme weakness of Faith.¹

Islam has recognised a certain amount of latitude in personal judgment, and hence the sharp distinction between the Islamic *rule* and the Islamic *faith*. No one is to be *forced* to embrace the Islamic faith, as we shall see presently, yet Islamic rule is to be established by all means. It was this basic distinction that non-Muslims are tolerated in an Islamic polity as inhabitants, as we have seen in Part II, Chapter IV, (b).

Regarding freedom of conscience we read in the Qur'ān :—

(a) There is no compulsion in religion. The right direction has become distinct from error. (2 : 256).

(b) Unto you your religion and unto me my religion. (109 : 6).

¹ *Ṣaḥīḥ* of Muslim, I, 50.

(c) And strive for God with the endeavour which is His right. He hath chosen you, and *hath not laid upon you in religion any hardship*; the faith of your father Abraham (is yours). He hath named you Muslims of old time and (also) in this (scripture, i.e., Qur'ān) that the Messenger may be a witness against you, and that ye may be witnesses against mankind. So establish worship, pay the Zakāt-tax, and hold fast to God. He is your Protecting Friend, and what a blessed Friend and a blessed Helper ! (22 : 78).

And similar other verses.

It is with this background that we ought to read the Fiqh books which expose Muslim law of war. They say :¹ When a Muslim state is free from internal commotion and strife, and has sufficient power to hope for victory in case of resistance, then it is its duty to invite the neighbouring² non-Muslim sovereigns to accept the unity of God as an article of faith and to believe in Muḥammad as the Messenger of God, in short to embrace Islam. If they do, they will retain their power and will secure themselves against hostility on the part of the Muslim state. If the invitation is rejected, the non-Muslim chief within the Arabian Peninsula has no other choice but to face the sword. If, however, his territory is outside Arabia, the alternative is to pay yearly *jizyah* or the protection-tax, which will secure his territory against Muslim attack. If both these alternatives are rejected and all peaceful persuasion and reasoning fail, then it is the duty of the Muslim state to declare war in the name of God until it conquers or receives the *jizyah*, or has the gratification

¹ Cf. any compendium of Muslim law, ch. War (*Mabṣūṭ*, Vol. 10, *Baḍā'i* of Kāsānīy, Vol. 7, Māwardīy and Abū-Ya'la's *Aḥkāmās-Sulṭānīyah*, *Shāfi'īy's Umm*, Vol. 4, Sarakhsīy's *Sharḥ as-siyar al-kabīr*, Vols. 1-4.

² Cf. Qur'ān, 9 : 123 (الَّذِينَ يُلُونَكُمْ).

to know that the other party has at last embraced Islam.

In subsequent chapters we shall see what are the actual laws which Islam has prescribed for the conduct of war regarding different kinds of enemies.

CHAPTER V

Enemy Persons

ENEMY persons, according to how they are treated, are of four kinds, *viz.*, apostates, rebels, highwaymen and pirates, and non-Muslim belligerents in general. The first three kinds are generally the subjects of the Muslim state and the last one consists of foreigners.

We shall deal with them *seriatim*. But it is to be noted from the very beginning that apostates, rebels and highwaymen come under international law only when they are of sufficient power or have acquired territory and rule over it.¹ Otherwise they belong to the ordinary criminal law of the land, and the treatment meted out to them has no relation to our subject.

¹ Māwardīy, *al-Aḥkām as-Sultānīyah*, pp. 90, 92, 96.

CHAPTER VI

Apostasy

TO wage war against apostates is justified on the same principle as that on which the punishment of a solitary apostate is based. The basis of Muslim polity being religious and not ethnological or linguistic, it is not difficult to appreciate the reason for penalising this act of apostasy. For it constitutes a politico-religious rebellion.

Apostasy in Muslim law means turning from Islam after being a Muslim. Not only does it occur when a person declares his conversion to some non-Islamic religion, but also when he refuses to believe in any and every article of the Islamic faith.¹

The sayings² and the doings³ of the Prophet, the decision and practice of the Caliph Abū-Bakr,⁴ the consensus of the opinion of the Companions of the Prophet and all the later Muslim jurisconsults,⁴ and even certain indirect verses of the Qur'an,⁵ all prescribe capital punishment for an apostate. In the case of apostasy, no distinction is made between a Muslim born of Muslim parents and a convert ; and similarly there is no difference between accepting Judaism or Christianity, atheism or idol-worship or any other non-Islamic faith. Nevertheless, Muslim jurists em-

¹ Māwardīy, p. 89 ; ردّة ch. فتاوى عالمگیری

² Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 98.

³ Māwardīy, p. 90, Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, I, 1639 ff.

⁴ Kāsānīy, *Badā'i*, VII, 134.

⁵ Qur'ān, 33 : 57, 5 : 54.

phasise that before prosecuting and condemning an apostate, it is necessary officially to discuss the matter with him and to remove his doubts regarding the soundness and reasonableness of the Islamic point of view in the matter concerned. Time is given him for reflection¹ sometimes even for months² before finally proceeding with the prosecution.

In case an insane person,³ a delirious, a melancholy and perplexed man,³ a minor,³ one intoxicated,³⁻⁴ one who had declared his faith in Islam under coercion,⁴ and a person whose faith in Islam has not been known or established⁵ were to become apostate they would not suffer the supreme penalty. So, too, an apostate woman,³⁻⁶ and a hermaphrodite,⁵ according to the Ḥanafī school of law would not be condemned to death, but imprisoned and even physically tortured. An old man from whom no offspring is expected is also excepted.⁷

Treatment of an Apostate.

The apostate has to choose between Islam and the sword: he cannot be given quarter (امان) nor will he be allowed to become a *dhimmīy*, i.e., a resident non-Muslim subject of the Muslim state on payment of the yearly protection tax.⁸

De jure he is dead. So if he does not re-embrace Islam, and escapes to some non-Muslim territory, his property in the Islamic territory will be distributed among his Muslim

¹ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 98-99.

² Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 110.

³ Kāsānīy, *Badā'ī*, VII, 134.

⁴ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 123.

⁵ Ibn-ʿĀbidīn, *Raddul-Muhtār*, III, 326-7.

⁶ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 111, Sarakhsīy, *Sharḥ al-uṣūl*, ch. الخبر يدققه التكميل (I have consulted MS. No. 1838, Bāyazīd, Istanbul).

⁷ Ibn-ʿĀbidīn, *Raddul-Muhtār*, III, 246.

⁸ Sarakhsīy *Mabsūt*, X, 116.

heirs¹ as if he were dead. In addition to this, the debts due to him will be wiped out if he has reached non-Muslim territory. This is what Māwardīy says,² but I wonder why these debts should not be inherited by the heirs of the renegade just like the rest of his property ?

Distinction between the Territory of Apostates and the Territory of ordinary non-Muslims.

Māwardīy writes that there are five characteristics in the territory of apostates (دار الردة) which distinguish it from the territory of ordinary non-Muslims (دار الكفر) namely :³

1. A treaty of peace or alliance is not ordinarily allowed with apostates ; no such restriction exists in relation to ordinary non-Muslim foreigners.

2. An apostate is not allowed to become a *dhimmīy* (non-Muslim subject of the Muslim state) ; not so an original non-Muslim.

3. As an apostate has nothing to choose but the re-embracing of Islam or the sword, he cannot be enslaved and so let live.

4. The booty acquired from an apostate is not to be distributed among the capturing troop ; it will go to the general exchequer. The different kinds of property captured from an ordinary non-Muslim belligerent will be treated in a subsequent chapter. It is to be noted, however, that property of dead apostates, captured during a conflict, at once becomes the property of the Muslim state ; but if living, his property is to be held in trust to be returned to him on re-embracing Islam or finally to be confiscated at his death.

¹ Ibn-Ābidīn, *Raddul-Muhtār*, III, 328-9 ; Sarakhṣīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 100.

² *Al-Aḥkām as-Sultānīyah*, in loco.

³ Māwardīy, *Al-Aḥkām as-Sultānīyah*, p. 94.

5. Apostates made prisoners, if they do not re-embrace Islam, will in due course be beheaded—no quarter may be given them as is the case regarding ordinary belligerent prisoners.

So far the differences : yet there are also certain similarities between the treatment¹ of apostates and that of non-Muslim belligerents. So an apostate is not held responsible for the destruction of Muslim life and property during the war, upon his return to Islam. This was actually decided in the time of the first Caliph, and of course his precedent could not be contested. Further, in being fought and pursued, the apostates are the same as other non-Muslim enemy combatants. Their ambassadors, too, will receive the same rights and immunities. So, during the life of the Prophet, the ambassadors of Musailimah the Impostor, came to Madinah ; and, on being asked, replied that they too held the notions of him who sent them. At this the Prophet said : " But for the fact that ambassadors cannot be killed, by God, I would have ordered you both to be beheaded." (They were Muslim subjects who had apostatised). Moreover, an apostate cannot inherit from his Muslim relatives.

¹ Generally for their treatment, Ṭabariy, *Hist.*, year 11 H.; *Kitāb-ar-riḍḍah* of Waḡidīy, MS. of Bānkīpūr; *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 98-124.

² Ibn-Hishām, 965.

CHAPTER VII

Civil Wars and Rebellions

FROM the pre-Islamic point of view, this chapter alone would represent Muslim International Law, that is, public law between Muslim states ; for here is described the treatment reserved for an equally civilised enemy. But Muslim law is based on the conception of the unity of Islam, and no wonder, therefore, that scarcely any provision has been made, in the positive law of Islam, regarding this kind of war. In the whole of the Qur'ān I found only one verse which deals with the subject :—

And if two parties of Believers fall to fighting, then make peace between them. And if one party of them doth wrong to the other, fight ye that which doth wrong till it return unto the ordinance of God ; then, if it return, make peace between them justly, and act equitably. Lo ! God loveth the equitable. (49 : 9).

And this solitary command is immediately followed by :—

The believers are naught else than brothers. Therefore make peace between your brethren and observe your duty to God that haply ye may obtain mercy. (49 : 10).

In the traditions of the Prophet also there are only a few sayings in general terms which do not help in constructing a whole system. We shall refer to these presently. The Muslim law of rebellion, as exposed in legal compendia, is generally based on the Orthodox Practice of the Caliph

'Alīy though it must be admitted that no later Muslim ruler reached the sublime height of idealism evinced by the pious son-in-law of the Prophet

(a) *Various Kinds of Opposition.*

According to the degree and nature of opposition to an established government, the following classification is humbly submitted :—

1. Religious grounds—the Khārijism.
2. Political or worldly reasons :
 - i. Insurrection.
 - ii. Mutiny.
 - iii. War of Deliverance.
 - iv. Rebellion.
 - v. Civil War.

1. *Opposition on religious grounds.*

So far as I know, only one instance is recorded by Muslim history of religious dissentients who were able to resist the whole government forces for any length of time. This refers to the Khārijites (literally the *dissentients*) who believed in a sort of *anarchy*, and accused all the rest of the Muslims of heresy and even disbelief. If they do not oppose any armed resistance to the established government, they are tolerated more or less in the same way as any other unorthodox sect.¹ If they are no longer passive and try to disestablish and replace the actual government they will be treated just like political rebels. No special privileges are attached to religious rebellion as distinguished from political rebellions.

¹ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 125; Māwardīy, p. 96. Muwaffaq records (in his مناقب أبي حنيفة, II, 21) a case of written truce with the Khārijites.

2. *Opposition to the government on political and worldly grounds.*

(i) If it is directed against certain acts of government officials, and no revolution is intended, we may call it *insurrection*. Their punishment belongs to the law of the land. International law does not take notice of them.

(ii) If the insurrection is intended to overthrow the legally established government on unjustifiable grounds, we call it *mutiny*.¹

(iii) On the other hand, if the insurrection is directed against a government established illegally, or which has become illegal for its tyranny, we may term the agitation a *war of deliverance*, no matter whether the government under which the Muslim community is toiling is Muslim or non-Muslim.

(iv) If the insurgents grow more powerful to the extent of occupying some territory and controlling it in defiance of the home government, we have a case of *rebellion*. The reluctance of some tribes, after the death of the Prophet, to pay government taxes was considered a rebellious act, and instructions were issued by the Caliph Abū-Bakr to subjugate them by force of arms. These people had not abjured Islam ; only they did not feel themselves bound to pay taxes to the central government.

(v) If the rebellion grows to the proportion of a government equal to the mother government, and hostilities continue, we may term it a *civil war*. There is no difference whether a rebel pretender has acquired power and successes, or, at the death or deposition of a head of the state, two claimants have sprung up and the sympathies of the people are divided. The wars between 'Alīy and Mu'āwiyah may be cited as an instance. Mu'āwiyah had theoretically not

¹ For further discussion cf. *مجله طیبسانین*, Hyderabad, Oct. 1940, pp. 11-12.

rebelled against 'Alīy since he had not taken the oath of 'Alīy's allegiance but opposed him ever since the murder of the third Caliph, 'Uthmān.

(b) *Treatment of Rebels, etc.*

According to al-Māwardīy, the punishment of rebels, in Muslim law, is not capital¹—they may be killed only on the battlefield, at the time of combat.² Generally this is true, but it cannot be taken strictly. For as-Sarakhsīy is explicit³ that on certain occasions, as for example when the rebellion is not yet completely subdued, the rebel prisoners may be beheaded. Of course, this refers only to the case when the rebel remains obstinate, and his repentance is not established.

One should warn the rebels of the consequences of their persistence, and one should excuse oneself before beginning battle.⁴ According to Māwardīy,⁵ night assaults and attacks without warning or notice are to be avoided in order to diminish Muslim bloodshed. But in the actual fight, rebels are treated in the same manner as non-Muslim belligerents. Even if a loyal subject who is, somehow or other, in the ranks of the rebels, be killed by the Muslim troops, the latter cannot be held responsible.

The aim of a fight with rebels is to prevent them from disturbing peace and order, not to kill them and exterminate them.⁶

They may be pursued and killed only when they have a stronghold wherein to take refuge and prepare for further

¹ *Al-Aḥkām as-Sulṭānīyah*, p. 97.

² *Idem*, p. 100.

³ *Mabsūt*, X. 126.

⁴ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 98. (اعذار و انذار).

⁵ *Ibid.*

⁶ *Ash-Shaibānīy, Kitāb al-Aḥl, ch. الخوارج و اهل البغى*, (MS, Aya Sofia, No. 1076).

⁷ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 98.

fight.¹

A rebel, unlike an apostate, may be given a quarter.²

The judgment of a court in a rebel state will be regarded as lawful and valid, and will not be upset when that country is subdued, unless it is proved that a certain decision has been contrary to Muslim law and no school of orthodox Muslims upheld it.³

If a subject of the Muslim state, whether prisoner, trader or otherwise, commits a crime in rebel territory, no suit may be brought against him in the court of the Muslim territory, not even at the reconquest by the Muslim state of the place where the criminal act was committed.⁴ For the jurisdiction of the loyal court did not extend to that place at the time.

As we shall see in the chapter on *Quarter* even the lowest of the Muslims, a slave even, can validly give quarter to a belligerent, and the quarter accorded by rebels to non-Muslims or even a treaty of friendship concluded with them is considered binding on the Muslim state which cannot molest them.⁵ Nevertheless the classical jurists know the subtle difference between quarter and a treaty of amity and an alliance to fight against the Muslim state. So as-Sarakhsīy says :

If the rebels asked for the help of some non-Muslim state in order to fight against the Muslim state, and they did fight, and finally the Muslim state defeated them, they could be enslaved (like ordinary non-Muslim belligerents). For the asking of help by the rebels is not like giving quarter, since the recipient of quarter enters the

¹ Ash-Shaibānīy, *op. cit.*, in the same place ; cf. Mas'ūdīy, *Murūj*, IV, 316 for the sayings of the Caliph 'Alīy.

² Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 129.

³ *Idem*, pp. 130, 135.

⁴ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 130.

⁵ *Mabsūṭ* of as-Sarakhsīy, X, 133.

Muslim territory for pacific purposes, whereas these did not enter Muslim territory except to fight loyal Muslim subjects.¹

(c) *Belligerent Rights of Rebels.*

Rights of full belligerency are conceded by Muslim law to rebels. As we have just seen, the judgment of their court is ordinarily not reversed after their submission. Similarly, if they collect revenue or other taxes, the people will be released from their obligation, and upon reconquest, the Muslim state may not exact the same taxes again.² So, too, if a merchant enters the rebel territory and pays customs duties, he will have to pay again on the border of the loyal Muslim territory,³ as if the rebel state were a foreign state. That they may conclude treaties with foreign state has already been mentioned in the previous section and their effects too have been described. Moreover, for wrongs committed in rebel territory, the culprits cannot be tried in the court of the loyal Muslim territory.⁴

The mutual loss to life and property caused during a conflict is to be left without exacting punishment, and no retaliation or damages may be assessed even when the culprits are identified.⁵ This immunity accrues to them on account of their being a *de facto* state ; otherwise if a band of robbers were to attack and plunder a city, their acts are not treated with impunity.⁶ Although Abū-Yūsuf records the opinion of some jurists to the contrary, he is definite that only the war material captured from rebels ought to be treated as war booty and cannot be returned to the relatives

¹ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 136.

² Sarakhsīy and others *in loco*.

³ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 101.

⁴ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 130.

⁵ *Idem*, pp. 127-28, quoting a precedent of the Caliph Abū-Bakr.

⁶ *Idem*, p. 135.

of the rebels ;¹ other property ought to return to rightful owners or their heirs as was 'Alīy's practice.²

The subdued rebels are, however, ordered by Muslim law to return to the rightful owner what they still actually possess of the property captured from loyal Muslim subjects.³

(d) Special Privileges of Rebels.

Unlike a non-Muslim state, no tribute can be taken from rebels if, for some reason or other, the Muslim state is willing to make peace with them. And if at all anything is taken, it must be ascertained whether it was private property of rebels or the property of the state, collected or captured by them : if it is government property, then the Muslim state may expend it for purposes for which it was intended ; and if it is the private property of the rebels, then the Muslim state has no right to appropriate it, but must return it, sooner or later, to its rightful owners.⁴

Save in defence, weapons unnecessarily destructive are not to be used against the rebels.⁵

Regarding a rebel force, 'Alīy is reported to have ordered :

و اذا هزمتموهم فلا تاجهزوا على جريح ولا تقتلوا على اسير ولا
تتبعوا موليا ولا تطلبوا مدبرا ولا تنكشفوا عورة ولا تمشلوا
بقتيل ولا تهتكوا سترا ولا تقربوا من اموالهم الا ما تجدونہ
في عسكرهم من سلاح او كراع او عبد او امة - و ما سوى ذلك
فهو ميراث لو رثتهم على كتاب الله -

¹ *Kitāb al-Kharāj*, p. 132.

² *Ibid.*, also, cf. *Murūj* of Mas'ūdīy, IV, Dīnawarīy, p. 213.

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Māwardīy*, *op. cit.*, 100.

⁵ *Ibid.*

When you defeat them, do not kill their wounded, do not behead the prisoners, do not pursue those who return and retreat, do not enslave their women, do not mutilate their dead, do not uncover what is to remain covered, do not approach their property except what you find in their camp of weapons, beasts, male or female slaves: all the rest is to be inherited by their heirs according to the Writ of God.¹

One of 'Alīy's commanders wrote in a despatch:

لعبدالله على امير المؤمنين من معقل بن قيس - سلام عليك
فانى اجد اليك الله الذى لا اله الا هو اما بعد فانا لقينا المارقين
وقد استظهروا علينا بالمشركين فقتلناهم قتل عاد وارم مع
انا لم نعد فيهم سيرتك ولم نقتل من المارقين مدبرا ولا
اسيرا ولم نذفف منهم على جريح وقد نصرك الله والمسلمين
والحمد لله رب العالمين -

To the Servant of God, 'Alīy, Commander of the Faithful, from Ma'qil-ibn-Qais: Salutation and Praise to God! We encountered the dissentients who had sought help against us from the *Associators*. We killed them like the *Amalekites*² yet we did not transgress thy conduct: we did not kill the retreating dissentients, nor the prisoners, nor killed the wounded among them. God has given victory to thee and the Muslims. Praise unto the Lord of all the Worlds.³

Their dead are to be buried.⁴ Their prisoners are gen-

¹ *Murūj*, of Mas'ūdīy, IV, 316-17;

الاعلام بالحروب الواقعة في صدر الاسلام ليوسف بن محمد بن ابراهيم الاندلسي (d 653 H.), fol. 86a (MS. Cairo, hist. No. 399).

² "Amalekite" is a graphic translation. Allusion to a saying of the Prophet recorded both by Bukhārīy and Muslim, and quoted by Ibn Taimiyah, *as-Siyāsah ash-Shar'iyah*, pp. 25, 60: سيجرح قوم - - - يمرقون -

من الدين - - - لئن ادركتهم لا قتلتهم قتل عاد

³ Yūsuf al-Andalusīy, *op. cit.*, fol. 12b., Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, anno. 38.

⁴ *Shāibānīy*, *al-Asl*, ch. الخوارج و اهل البغى

erally not to be beheaded, and if they convincingly promise to behave in future like loyal and law-abiding subjects, they ought even to be immediately released.¹ No ransom may be demanded for the release of prisoners.² Rebel prisoners, Muslims or non-Muslims, may never be enslaved.³ The army of 'Alīy clamoured for the enslavement of their prisoners, and "Alīy bluntly reminded them:⁴ Well, then who will take 'Ā'ishah, the wife of the Prophet and Mother of the Faithful?"—She was the leader of an army against 'Alīy, and at the time was under his guards.

The servants and followers of their camp may only be killed in battle if they take part in actual combat.

As the killing of a Muslim by the hands of a non-Muslim is religiously not allowed, it is inadvisable to enlist non-Muslims in a campaign against Muslim rebels.

A woman rebel may only be killed in defence.

7 (وإذا قاتلن قتلن الدفع)

(e) *Miscellanea.*

If the rebels attack a country friendly to the Muslim state, and acquire booty which is afterwards captured by the loyal troops from the hands of the rebels, it must be returned to the original owners.⁵ The loyal subjects of the Muslim state in the rebel territory may join forces with the rebels against a non-Muslim foreign attack.⁶ If the rebels co-operate with the loyal troop in a fight against a common enemy, they share in the booty with the loyal troop.⁸

¹ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 99.

² *Shāibānīy, op. cit.*, etc.

³ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 127.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ *Shāibānīy, الأصل*, ch. *ibid.*

⁶ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 98, 133-34.

⁷ *Idem*, p. 130.

⁸ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, p. 130.

Although the non-Muslim soldiers of the Muslim army ordinarily do not *share* in the war-booty along with Muslim soldiers, but are given only a prize approximate to their labours, ash-Shaibānī, in a stray passage, opines that if they form in themselves a strong force sufficient to act independently, or the Muslim army is not strong enough without them, then they also *share* the booty in common.¹ If hostages are exchanged, and the rebels murder the loyal hostages, the rebel hostages may not be punished even when that had been agreed upon, for the guilt is not theirs personally but of their government.² The captured property of rebels which cannot be made booty, may yet be sold for convenience's sake, and the proceeds returned to rightful owners at the cessation of hostilities.³

(f) *Deposition of the Muslim Ruler.*

A passing reference may be made in this connexion to the possibility of deposition of a Muslim ruler by the pillars of the State if he has become unbearably tyrannical or otherwise incapable of discharging his duties, e.g., because of insanity, capture by an enemy, etc. (cf. *k. al imārah* in any law-book).

In general, Muslims are exhorted in the Qur'ān⁴ and in the Hadith⁵ always to obey the authorities. In an oft-quoted tradition,⁶ the Prophet has observed : " Everyone of you is a

¹ Shāibānī, *op. cit.*

² Sarakhsī, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 129, quoting Qur'ān, 6 : 164, also decision of Abū-Ḥanīfah acquiesced in by Caliph Maṣṣūr, regarding hostages of a non-Muslim state, applying pre-eminently to Muslim rebels.

³ Sarakhsī and others *in loco*.

⁴ 4 : 59. Cf. my " Quranic Conception of State, " in *The Quranic World*, Hyderabad, April 1936.

⁵ *Tabwīb* of 'Alīy al-Muttaqī (my private MS.), ch. Kitāb al-umarā'.

⁶ 'Alīy al-Muttaqī quoting in his *Tabwīb* on the authority of Bukhārī, Muslim, Abū-Dawūd, Trimidhī, Ibn Ḥanbal, Tabarānī and others.

shepherd and everyone of you is responsible for those under his care. So the ruler is a shepherd and is responsible for his subjects ; a man is a shepherd and is responsible for his family; a woman is a shepherdess and is responsible for the house of her husband; a servant is a shepherd and is responsible for the property of his master ; a boy is a shepherd and is responsible for the property of his father—in fact everyone of you is a shepherd and is responsible for those in his care.”¹ Yet this responsibility is before God in the next world. People are exhorted to obey even tyrants ; and in a characteristic tradition, the Prophet is reported to have said : “ If the ruler is just, he will get his reward and you ought to be grateful ; if the ruler is a tyrant, he will get his punishment and you ought to have patience.”² No wonder that in spite of all this the Prophet has unequivocally said : “ No obedience to any creature in disobedience to the Creator.”³ It is quite in harmony with the fundamental principle of the Muslim polity that God is the real Sovereign of the world, and that man is only His vicegerent. (Cf. also part 2, ch. 3).

(g) *Non-Muslim Rebels.*

So far we have discussed briefly the position of Muslims as rebels. Some peculiarities of non-Muslim subjects, when they rebel, may be profitably added.

Rebellion by purely non-Muslim subjects will be treated as rebellion only in case their territory is surrounded on all sides by the Muslim state. Non-Muslim rebels of a province fronting non-Muslim territory are placed by

¹ Score of other sayings of the Prophet are recorded by Ḥadīth books, brought together in *Kanzul ‘ummāl*, etc.

² Abū Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 6 ; Ibn-Qutaibah, *‘Uyūn-al-aḥbār*, I, 3 ; etc.

³ *Tabwīb* of ‘Alīy-al-Muttaqī, from Ibn-Ḥanbal, *Tirmidhiy*, Abū-Dāwūd, etc.

Muslim jurists in the same position as ordinary non-Muslim belligerents.¹ The reason is, as we have seen before,² that all non-Muslim peoples form one category for Muslim jurists, no matter whether politically they constitute one or several groups. In case of rebels of a frontier province, the supposition is that they may have relations with the adjoining non-Muslim state.

Non-Muslim subjects will, however, receive the same privileges as ordinary rebels, in spite of their being of a frontier province, when they are not the leaders of the rebellion but only join hands with the local Muslim rebels.³

¹ *Fatāwī Tātārkhāniyah*, ch. Rebels.

² Cf. *supra*, part 2. ch. 4, b.

³ Sarakhsiy, *Mabṣūṭ*, X, 128.

CHAPTER VIII

International Highwaymen and Pirates

IN early Islamic literature there is scarcely any separate mention of pirates. Ibn-Sa'd¹ mentions one piratical incident of Abyssinians in the time of the Prophet, the details of which are lacking. Generally, pirates are included in highwaymen. As Ṭabarī² says, there is no difference between the highwaymen of the country or foreigners, so far as their treatment is concerned. Of course, we are concerned here only with the case of international pirates and highwaymen.

Nearly all the details of the treatment accorded to them are deduced from or based upon the following verses of the Qur'ān, which were originally revealed, it is said,³ regarding some international brigands and highwaymen (of a country allied to the Muslim state) :—

The only reward of those who make war upon God and His Messenger and strive after discord in the land will be that they will be killed or crucified, or have their hands and feet on alternate sides cut off, or will be banished from the land. Such will be their degradation in the world, and in the Hereafter theirs will be an awful doom ; save those who repent before ye overpower them. For know that God is Forgiving, Merciful. (5 : 33-34).

¹ *Tabaqāt*, 2/1, pp. 17-18.

³ *Tafsīr*, VI, 135.

² *Tafsīr*, VI, pp. 132-33 ; *Asl* of *Shāibānīy* (MS. Wafā'-Aṭif, Istanbul), Vol. II, fol. 40a, ch. *قطع الطريق* Cf. *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, IX, 134.

By the unanimity of commentators on the Qur'ān, the warring people referred to in the verses are highwaymen, dacoits and the like. According to law-books, their treatment is :

1. For murder accompanied by plunder, beheading followed by crucifixion.

2. For murder only, beheading.

3. For plunder only, without loss to life, the amputation of hand and foot on alternate sides.

4. For only banding together with the intent of plunder and murder, but having as yet committed nothing of the kind, discretionary punishment may be inflicted.

The banishment mentioned above is one of the discretionary punishments. It is interpreted either as imprisonment, expulsion from the state, externment, or confinement to a border district with all its hazards. However, expulsion from the state is never upheld if the culprits are of the Muslim faith, lest they apostatise or join forces against the Muslim state.¹

If subjects of a Muslim state commit highway robbery in a foreign country even against Muslim subjects, their case may not be heard in a Muslim court² though they may be extradited if there is treaty to that effect. On the other hand, if foreigners enter Muslim territory and commit depredation on passers-by, their case may be heard in the Muslim court.³ In a learned discussion, Ibn-Taimīyah⁴ says that even if the highwayman is superior in status to the murdered person—if, for example, he is a Muslim, a free man or a Muslim subject, and the murdered person is a non-

¹ Māwardī, *op. cit.* pp. 102-06; Kasānī, *Badā'i*, VII, 94-95; Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, IX, 135.

² Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, IX, 203-04, *Aṣl* of *Shāibānī*, ch. *قطع الطريق*, fol. 41a

³ *Shāibānī*, *Aṣl* ch. *قطع الطريق* (MS. Wafā'-'Atif), fol. 40a.

⁴ *السياسة الشرعية*, pp. 36-37.

Muslim, a slave or a foreigner residing in the Muslim territory—the murderer must be sentenced to death. Citing a precedent, Ibn-Taimīyah refers to the fact that the Caliph 'Umar inflicted capital punishment upon the watchman of a gang of highwaymen.

Special Features of their Treatment.

Generally speaking, the treatment of highwaymen is the same as that of rebels. Yet the following differences¹ may be noted :—

1. They, unlike rebels, may be pursued in every case.
2. The aim of the expedition must be to exterminate them.
3. They are held responsible for every act of theirs, whether committed before the encounter with them or during the fight with government forces itself.
4. Pending result of investigation, they may be detained in prison.
5. The taxes collected by them will be considered as mere usurpation and the tax-payer may again be taxed. Obviously he will have a right to the property recovered from the possession of the highwaymen.

As the Quranic verse quoted above enjoins, if individually or *en masse* the gang submit themselves to the authorities before government can lay hands on them, and give assurance of repentance and future good behaviour, the members may be pardoned. In this case, no action may be brought against them for their past crimes against life and property.

CHAPTER IX

War with Non-Muslim Foreigners

WAR is defined by Muslim jurists as the expending of ability and power in fighting in the path of God by means of life, property, tongue and other than these.¹ And to realise this, Muslim doctors enjoin: "First to preserve one's own power and then to break that of the unbelievers and to subjugate them."² As war to Islam does not allow any self-seeking aggrandisement at the expense of others, but simply to establish a theocracy, a Kingdom of God on earth, no wonder at the insistence upon the point of view of the soldiery being quite selfless. The slightest desire for worldly gain pollutes the purity and mars the nobleness of *jihād*. Jihād is to be waged solely for the purpose that "the Word of God shall alone prevail" ³(من قاتل لتكون كلمة الله هي). Otherwise Paradise would not be the reward of such a soldier.

¹ Cf. *infra* ch. 3, "definition of war."

² *سراخسي الكبير*, شرح السير الكبير, I, 127 : لان حقيقة الجهاد في : حفظ قوة انفسهم اولا ثم في قهر المشركين وكسر شوكتهم .

³ *Bukhārīy*, 3 : 45, 55 : 10, 57 : 8 and 10, 97 : 28 ; *Muslim*, 33 : 149-151 ; *Tirmidhīy*, 20 : 16 ; *Nasa'iy*, 25 : 21 ; *Ibn-Mājah*, 24 : 13 ; *Tayālisīy*, No. 486-8 ; *Ibn-Hanbal*, IV, 392, 397, 401, 405, 417 bis. Cf. *Qur'ān*, 9 : 40, 839, 5 : 54.

CHAPTER X

Declaration of War

IN a defensive or punitive war, obviously, there is no need of the declaration or notification to the other party of the military action. When otherwise, Muslim jurists¹ hold :—

When Muslims encounter unbelievers to whom Islam is an unknown thing, Muslims must not attack before inviting them to accept the 'Unity of God' as an article of faith, or to agree to pay the protection tax (*jizyah*)—unless they belong to a nation from whom it is not accepted and who have to choose between Islam and the sword—(this refers to all apostates and idolaters of the Arabian Peninsula regarding whom the Qur'ān lays down : "Fight them unless they embrace Islam")—and if they are fought against and blood is shed, no previous warning having been given, the Shāfi'ite school of thought holds that the Muslim state has to pay for each human life, destroyed in the fight, as much blood-money as is prescribed for a Muslim killed unintentionally. The Hanafite school, however, leaves the blood of such unbelievers with impunity. But if such a nation understands fully what Islam means, warning and excuse may again be made—though this is not compulsory. For they know why they are attacked, and an ultimatum may hinder the achieving of the aim. With this kind of people, however, the Muslim state may fight

¹ Sarakhsīy, *شرح السیر الكبير*, I, 57-58.

without first inviting them to accept Islam or pay protection tax.

Instructions of the Prophet are quoted to support this view.¹ Upon careful scrutiny, however, the above exposition of law does not seem to apply except to cases of individual encounter between bands of two belligerent states. The main question of the general declaration of war upon the enemy government does not seem to have been settled. For this also we may refer to the practice of the Prophet, that safe and perennial source of Muslim law. So, in three kinds of cases, the Prophet seems to have waged war without previous notice.

1. Fresh encounters of an enemy with whom no peace is made, though the forces of the two parties separated from each other from time to time. The expeditions against the Meccans are an instance.

2. Preventive war (against the threatened aggression of a foreign state with whom no treaty relations exist). The wars of Banu'l-Muṣṭaliq, Khaibar, Ḥunain are all of this kind.

3. Punitive and Retaliatory war (to punish a state for a breach of treaty). The attack on Banū-Qainuqā', Banū-Quraizah, Mecca, etc., are instances thereof. If peace is made on the payment of tribute, and later the payment is withheld, there is some divergence of opinion as to the question whether an ultimatum is necessary or attack may be launched without further notice. (Cf. Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, ch. iv.)

In all other cases, previous declaration is necessary, and especially so against the threatened violation by a state with whom treaty relations exist. So the Qur'ān lays down :

And if thou fearest treachery from any folk, then, throw back to them (their treaty) on a par. Lo ! God loveth not the treacherous. (8 : 58).

¹ For instance, *Ṣaḥīḥ of Muslim* (ed. Istanbul), V, 139-40.

And as-Sarakhsīy comments on this verse in the following terms :

On a par, that is, you and they are on a par with regard to knowledge. And thus we learn that it is not permissible to fight them before throwing back (the treaty) and before their knowing that.¹

Further discussion will be found in a subsequent chapter on truce and armistice.

¹ Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 87.

CHAPTER XI

Effects of Declaration of War

PROBABLY due to the practice prevalent in the time of classical jurists in countries adjoining Muslim territory, all enemy persons and property were considered as in a state of war. Although treatment differs from category to category, as we shall see in due course, no one can claim complete immunity. Every able-bodied man¹ was considered a potential combatant, and even women and children could be taken prisoner.

1. *General Effects.*

Obviously all friendly relations come to an end between the belligerent states as well as their subjects. Envoys are recalled. The public forces of the state get the right to fight the enemy and inflict damage according to their laws of war. Officials and private citizens, all are prohibited from giving the enemy any help, comfort or information. The case of Hāṭib,² who attempted to send information to the enemy regarding Muslim designs, and the consequent trial, form a classical example of the time of the Prophet. The constitution³ of the city-state of Madīnah during the early years of Hijrah also enjoins the same thing (vide § 20, 43). The Qur'ān also clearly lays down: "Let them find you rigorous"⁴ and again: "Be rigorous with them." Neverthe-

¹ See *infra*, chapter XIII, 2.

² Ibn-Hishām, pp. 809-10; Ṭabarī, *Hist.*, I, 1626-27.

³ For text, see Ibn-Hishām, pp. 341-44 or my *Corpus*.

⁴ Qur'ān, 9 : 123.

⁵ *Idem*, 9 : 73.

less it is characteristic of the Quranic teaching to emphasise the following regarding the Quraish, the bitterest of the enemies of Islam at the time :

“ And let not your hatred of a folk who (once) stopped your going to the Inviolable Place of Worship (i.e. Ka'bah in Mecca) seduce you to transgress ; but *help ye one another* with righteousness and pious duty. Help not one another unto sin and transgression, but fear God. Lo ! God is severe in punishment.” (5 : 2).

Far from banning all co-operation with the enemy, this Quranic command urges that there must be co-operation regarding charitable and pious matters. Commentators of this verse refer to cases which were the occasion of the revelation of this command, cases in which Muslims were justified in taking counter-measures against their enemy but were prevented on humanitarian grounds.

2. *Effects on Commercial Relations.*

I have not been able to find much material on this important subject in the compendia of Muslim law. A few cases of classical times may, therefore, be profitably quoted.

(a) Sa'd-ibn-Mu'adh says that he was a friend of Umaiyah-ibn-Khalaf *alias* Abū-Şafwān. If Umaiyah passed through Madīnah, he stayed with Sa'd, and if Sa'd passed through Mecca, he stayed with Umaiyah. When the Prophet came to Madīnah, Sa'd went to Mecca for the 'Umrah pilgrimage and stayed with Umaiyah, and told him to find some suitable hour for accomplishing the circumambulation of the Ka'bah. So they went out at about noon. Abū-Jahl met them, and asked Umaiyah : O Abū-Şafwān, who is this with thee ? He said, Sa'd. Then Abū-Jahl turned to him and said : Don't I see thee circumambulating with peace in Mecca in spite of the fact that ye have given asylum to innovators (i.e. Muslims) and pretend that ye will help them

and aid them? By God, hadst thou not been with Abū-Şafwān thou wouldst not have returned to thy people in safety. Sa'd loudly retorted: By God, if thou preventest this, then I shall prevent thee in what is much worse for thee: thy passage through the people of Madīnah.¹

(b) 'Abd-ar-Raḥmān-ibn-'Awf says: I concluded a pact with Umaīyah-ibn-Khalaf in order that he might protect my belongings in Mecca and I protect his belongings in Madīnah. When I wrote my name "'Abd-ar-Raḥmān," he said: I do not know this, but write thy pre-Islamic name. So I signed "'Abd-Amr." When it was the day of Badr. . . .²

Both these cases refer to very early days of Hijrah, before the battle of Badr, which occurred in the year 2 H. Therefore not much importance must attach to them, the more so on account of the fact that there is no evidence of their having happened with the knowledge and approbation of the Prophet.

(c) Thumāmah-ibn-Uḥāl was a chieftain of Yamāmah. Early in the year 6 H., he was taken prisoner by a Muslim detachment, and brought to Madīnah. Here the gentle treatment of the Prophet impressed him so much that he embraced Islam. On return journey, he passed through Mecca and heard some abusive cuts on his conversion. He said: Not a grain of Yamāmah can now be imported into your city, unless the Prophet directs otherwise. A famine is said, consequently, to have ensued in Mecca. The Meccans were constrained humbly to beseech the Prophet to lift the ban, which he graciously did.³ Although many details of this case lie in darkness, it is sufficient for us to conclude that it all depends upon a government

¹ Bukhārī, 64: 2 (ch. Wikālah).

² *Idem*, 40: 2 (ch. Maghāzī).

³ Ibn-Hishām, pp 997-8; Ibn-'Abd al-Bar, No. 278; Ibn-Ḥajar, *Iṣābah* No. 961; *Ta'rikh al-Khamis*, II, 3; cf. Ibn-Sa'd, V, 401.

to direct its subjects whether and how far they may trade with an enemy.

(d) The Prophet himself once sent a quantity of the dates of Madīnah to the Meccan magnate, Abū-Sufyān, and required in return hides. This is said to have occurred at a time when hostilities were continuing between Mecca and Madīnah.¹ This further strengthens our conclusion that it all depended upon state policy what things were to be declared contraband of war and trade, and which not.

3. *Effects on Trusts and Debts.*

Although international credit of 1300 years ago can scarcely be compared with modern magnitudes, still we may be guided by a few classical cases and provisions of positive law in general terms.

(a) When the excesses of the Meccans had reached their climax, and they had actually plotted against the life of the Prophet and consequently he left Mecca to seek safety in Madīnah, he bade his cousin, 'Alīy, to return all that was entrusted to the Prophet by his infidel and actually belligerent co-citizens.² There is no doubt that the Meccans could be considered at that time as belligerents.³ We do not think the action of the Prophet would have been different at the height of his power.

(b) During the war of Khaibar, the Prophet ordered Aswad, a slave of a Khaibarite Jew, who had come to embrace Islam along with all the sheep and goats of his master which he tended as a shepherd: Go to a safe distance

¹ Sarakhṣīy, *شرح السير الكبير* I, 70; *Idem*, *ممسوط*, X, 92.

² Ibn-Hishām, p. 334; Ibn-Sa'd, 3/1, p. 13; Mas'ūdīy, *at-Tanbih*, p. 233.

³ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 323-24:

و عرفوا انه قد اجمع للحرب - - - والله ما نامنه على الوثوب علينا
من قد اتبعه من غيرنا تباعوه على حربنا

Also p. 296 for provision in the pact of 'Aqabah; cf. Ibn-Sa'd, 1/1, pp. 148-50.

and then frighten the herd so that it takes its usual way home to its master.¹

(c) During the reign of the Caliph 'Umar, Ḥimṣ was occupied by Muslim troops and the usual taxes were levied and collected from the inhabitants. Later, military exigencies required the evacuation of the city. Thereupon the Muslim commander ordered all taxes to be returned to the inhabitants, saying: We promised to protect you. Since we can no longer do that, we have no right to your payments.²

The Qur'ān commands :

i. Lo ! God commandeth you that ye restore deposits to their owners, and if ye judge between mankind, that ye judge justly. (4 : 58).

ii. ...And if one of you entrusteth to another, let him who is trusted deliver up that which is entrusted to him and let him fear God. (2 : 283).

In the sayings of the Prophet we find :

i. The sword erases all obligations except the debt.³

ii. Whoever is entrusted with a deposit, let him deliver it up to the one who entrusted it to him.⁴

No doubt responsibilities and obligations may be renounced on the ground of retaliation,⁵ yet one's burden should not be placed upon another who is innocent.⁶

However, it has not been possible for me to trace any

¹ لاكتفاء في مغازي المصطفى by al-Kulā'iy, fol. 75b of Berlin MS.; Ibn-Hishām, pp. 769-70.

² Abū-Yūsuf, *Khārāj*, p. 81, Balādhurīy, *Futūḥ*, 173, Azdiy, *Futūḥ*, 137-8, De Geoe, *Mémoire sur la conquête de la Syrie*, 2nd ed., pp. 103 4.

³ Sarakhsīy, *شرح السير الكبير*, I, 20.

⁴ Occurring in the oration of the last Pilgrimage, text in my—*الوثائق السياسية* on the authority of Ibn-Hishām, Ṭabarīy, Ya'qūbīy and *البيان والتبيين* of Jāihz.

⁵ Qur'ān, 16:12, 1:38, 40:40, 42, 40 6:161; etc.

⁶ Qur'ān, 6:165, etc. (ولا تزر وازرة وزر اخرى).

precise practice regarding the subject during the later Muslim empires.

4. *Effects on Treaties.*

Scarcely any book on Muslim law or politics discusses the theoretical aspect of this question. Yet it is obvious that mere declaration of war cannot affect all the treaties that were concluded between the parties at war with each other.

Treaties which have achieved their aim, for instance, the fixing of boundaries and the like, are not affected by mere declaration of war. We are not concerned here with changes that the war under discussion may bring out regarding questions previously settled.

On the other hand, treaties of friendship and good neighbourliness, alliance and mutual assistance and the like, are rendered null and void if such contracting parties choose to declare war upon each other.

Apart from these two obvious kinds, there are treaties which remain suspended during friendship and are enforced only when hostilities involve the contracting parties in battle. This refers to treaties for mutual conduct during war. Such treaties are old enough to be mentioned by ash-Shaibānī¹ who gives many fictitious cases of such treaties regarding the treatment of prisoners of war, cutting off of the water-supply, devastation of occupied or evacuated country and the like.

There are treaties which are individually disposed of at discretion : they are cancelled, suspended or modified. This refers to treaties of trade and commerce, import duties and the like.²

In modern times, there are treaties which though suspen-

¹ Cf. Sarakhsīy, شرح السيرة الكبير I, 200-05.

² Cf. *supra*, "Effect on Commercial Relations."

ded during a war, automatically revive at the conclusion of peace if the ex-belligerents retain their independence. Such are treaties for the exchange of post and telegrams and similar things.

So far we have referred to bilateral pacts. Multilateral treaties give greater complexity to the problem when some of the parties remain neutral and others join the conflict on one or the other side. There may even be cases when, neutrals apart, all the remaining parties of a former treaty join a war *en bloc* against a country alien to the treaty in question.

Obviously the nature of the convention or the contents of the treaties constitute the decisive factor. We possess no data to rely upon except a few cases of the Orthodox Practice.

The classical treaties require an exhaustive study. Here I content myself with the citation of a few cases of the time of the Prophet.

(a) When the Prophet migrated to Madīnah, he found there chaos and anarchy. It was he who constituted¹ a city-state there on a loose confederal basis. The Meccan refugees formed one unit; Arab tribes of Madīnah consisting of Muslim and non-Muslim clans all joined individually; and the Jewish tribes also entered the federation, each tribe forming a separate entity. The internecine feuds among Jews as well as Arabs of Madīnah had not yet welded them into solid blocks, and in fact in pre-Islamic days some Arab tribes had allied themselves with some Jewish ones in order to secure themselves against another block of Arab and Jewish tribes all living within the precincts of a valley about fifteen miles long and as wide. Apparently this separate and individual adherence to the confederation was the reason why the pact remained intact even when some Jewish tribes

¹ Text of the Constitution in Ibn-Hishām, pp. 341-44, etc.

came to war with the Muslims of the city-state. This refers to the clans of Qainuqā'.¹ Later still, when other Jewish tribes came into bloody conflict with the Muslims, the other Jews of the city either remained neutral or even helped the Prophet against their co-religionists.² After the expulsion of certain Jewish tribes from Madīnah, the Prophet demanded of some of the remaining Jews, on the ground of this very pact which constituted Madīnah into a city-state, to participate in contributing towards the payment of the blood-money for a certain case of homicide.³

(b) Another case of a multilateral treaty in the time of the Prophet is the famous one of Ḥudaibiyah⁴ between Mecca and Madīnah to which some tribes had adhered on either side. When the Meccans once molested the tribe adhering to the Muslim side, the whole pact of non-aggression and trade facilities was considered by the Muslims null and void.

How to conclude, amend or annul the treaties will be dealt with later.

¹ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 545-46; my *La Diplomatie Musulmane*, I, 26.

² Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 23.

³ Ibn-Hishām, p. 652, Ibn-Sa'd, 2/1, pp. 40-41, Ṭabarīy, I, 1449-50.

⁴ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 747-48 and my *Corpus*.

CHAPTER XII

Treatment of Enemy Persons

AT the outbreak of a war, enemy persons might be found either in Islamic territory, having come there by permission previously, or in their own territory, or in the war zone. Treatment of these different categories differs considerably.

I. Enemy Resident Aliens.

By *Musta'min* in Muslim legal terminology one means a person who temporarily resides in a foreign country, by its permission. There are, in Arabic, no different terms which distinguish between a Muslim going to non-Muslim territory and a non-Muslim coming to Muslim territory nor even between a subject of an allied state (who is otherwise called *Muwāḍi'*, but for the purpose of this chapter he is also a *Musta'min*) or unallied or even belligerent state. All are alike called *Musta'min* which literally means one who seeks protection.

Such a foreign resident in Muslim territory is as safe at the outbreak of war between his state and the Muslim state as before.¹ According to the terms of the passport he might return home whenever he liked ; he might even take with him all his property. Contraband is certainly excepted yet anything he had actually brought with him he might take back.² Newly bought contraband of war has to be sold or otherwise disposed of in Muslim territory itself. Gene-

¹ Kāsānīy, بدائع, VII, 107, ll. 15-16.

² Sarāḫsīy, Mabsūṭ, X, 91-92.

rally a resident alien can go from Muslim territory in whichever direction he chooses, yet a big detachment of them would not be allowed to go to some other country which is at war with the Muslim state when it is feared that they would join forces there against the Muslims.¹ They can, however, return to their own country unmolested even when it is at war with the Muslim state.² For to detain them would be violation of pledge. If a *Musta'min* acts as a spy, he forfeits his immunity. This also happens if a *Musta'min* of a belligerent state becomes an ordinary belligerent immediately after leaving Islamic territory, and his immunity that he enjoyed during his stay in the Muslim territory comes to an end.

2. *Enemy at Home.*

Enemy persons living in their homes have to suffer the severities of siege and other incidents of war. When their town is conquered and occupied by Muslim forces, their treatment depends on the terms of surrender and capitulation or general proclamation by the officer commanding. Other details will follow.

3. *Enemy in the War Zone.*

In the actual war zone not only the enemy combatants

¹ *Idem*, شرح السيرة الكبير, IV, 121-22:

و لو ان قوماً من اهل الحرب دخلوا الينا بامان ثم ارادوا ان يخرجوا الى دار حرب اخرى ليكونوا معهم يقاتلون اهل الاسلام فلا ينبغي للمسلمين ان يحذروهم من ذلك و ان كان الداخل واحداً او اثنين لم يمنع من الرجوع الى دار حرب اخرى للتجارة معهم لان بهذا القدر لا يزداد قوة اهل هذه الدار على قتالنا بخلاف ما اذا كانوا اهل منعة .

² Kāsānīy, etc., in loco.

but even others could not claim absolute security. Of course, Muslim soldiers have to take care that they do not fire directly on neutrals, women and minors and other non-combatants, yet if any damage is done to them unintentionally, no responsibility is to be placed on the Muslim army.

So far as war is concerned, no distinction is made between an enemy subject and foreign allies taking part in fight. But distinction is made between able-bodied combatants and followers of the army, contractors, traders, physicians, reporters and others who do not take part in actual fighting. The wives and children of enemy combatants also share some of the severities of war, as will be described in the following chapters.

CHAPTER XIII

Acts Forbidden

IN actual fight the following acts are forbidden to a Muslim army as regards enemy persons and property.

1. Unnecessarily cruel and tortuous ways of killing. The Prophet has said in this connexion: "Fairness is prescribed by God in every matter; so if you kill, kill in a fair way."¹

2. Killing non-combatants.² Combatants are only those who are physically capable of fighting (المقاتلة من له بنية (صالحة للقتال)).³ Women,⁴ minors,⁴ servants and slaves who accompany their masters yet do not take part in actual fighting,⁵ the blind,⁶ monks,⁷ hermits,⁸ the very old,⁹ those physically incapable of fighting,¹⁰ the insane or delirious¹¹—these are authoritative examples thereof.

3. Prisoners of war are not to be decapitated.¹² Details of their treatment will be given in a separate chapter.

¹ *Ṣaḥīḥ* of Muslim, (ed. Istanbul), VI, 72.

² *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy X. 64.

³ شرح السير الكبير, IV, 78.

⁴ *Idem*, I, 59, 34. Exceptions in special cases, المحيط البرهاني, III, ch. p. 266, on the authority of *Shaibānīy*.

⁵ شرح السير الكبير, IV, 79-80.

⁶ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X. 69.

⁷ شرح السير الكبير, I, 33.

⁸ *Idem*, III, 190

⁹ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 6.

¹⁰ *Idem*, p. 69.

¹¹ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 69.

¹² Cf. *infra*, ch. 15.

4. Mutilation of men as well as beasts.¹

5. Treachery and perfidy².

6. Devastation, destruction of harvest, cutting trees unnecessarily.³

7. Slaughtering animals more than what is necessary for food.⁴

8. Excess and wickedness.⁵

9. Adultery and fornication even with captive women. As regards a free enemy woman, the violator is to be stoned to death or whipped according to whether he is married or unmarried. If, however, she is a captive, he is to receive discretionary punishment *and* to be fined as much as a مهر مثل (i.e., what his nearest female relatives would have received as bride-money) which would be added to the general booty.⁶

10. Killing enemy hostages, even if those of the Muslim state have been murdered by the enemy, and even if there is express agreement that hostages may be beheaded in retaliation.⁷

11. Severing the head of some fallen enemy and sending it to higher Muslim authorities is regarded as improper and disliked (مكروه). The first Caliph issued orders forbidding it.⁸

12. There is no instance in the time of the Prophet when a massacre was allowed after vanquishing the enemy

¹ شرح السيرة الكبير I, 78, Tirmidhiy, 19: 48, Abū-Dāwūd, 15: 110.

² 'Abd-al-Jalīl, *Shu'ab al-īmān*, p. 558, ch. Wafā'al-'ahd ma'a al-mushrikīn (MS. Bashīr Aghā, Istanbul, No. 366), sayings of the Prophet collected together. Cf. Qur'ān, 17: 34, etc.

³ شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 27, 34; Qur'ān, 2: 205.

⁴ شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 36.

⁵ Idem, I, 37.

⁶ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 88.

⁷ Idem, p. 84, *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhṣiy, X, 129.

⁸ Sarakhṣiy, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 131; شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 78.

or otherwise occupying a place. The conquest of Mecca provides a fine example. After all those innumerable physical tortures and proprietary damages which the Muslims had received at the hands of their Meccan enemy, when the Prophet conquered the city, he declared a general amnesty excluding expressly about half a dozen named persons, who were declared outlaws to be killed wherever found. They were state criminals having committed murder and apostasy or similar offences. Later, these also were pardoned, except three who were killed by Muslim soldiers without referring again to the Prophet.¹

13. Killing parents, except in absolute self-defence, even if they are non-Muslims and in the enemy ranks. There are more cases than one in which the Prophet forbade persons who had asked for permission to kill their non-Muslim parents on ground of hostility to Islam.²

14. Killing peasants when they do not fight and the result of war is indifferent to them.³

15. Traders, merchants, contractors and the like are to be spared if they do not take part in actual fighting.⁴

16. Burning a captured man or animal to death. Once the Prophet despatched a band with the instruction to arrest a culprit and burn him alive; but he immediately recalled them and ordered them not to burn the criminal, but simply to kill him; for, he said, only the Lord of

¹ Ibn-Hishām, pp. 818-19; Ṭabariy, *Hist.*, I, 1639ff.

² شرح السيرة الكبير, I, 75-76, III, 183, 192.

³ *Idem*, IV, 79; for order and practice of Abū-Bakt, cf. Ṭabariy, I, 2026, 2031; for 'Umar cf. Ibn-Rushd, بداية المجتهد, I, 311, *Kharāj* of Yaḥya-ibn-Ādam (ed Brill), p. 34.

⁴ *Kharāj* of Yaḥya, p. 34: من جابر قال كانوا لا يقتلون تجار المشركين cf. *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 122 for similar kind of non-fighting followers in Muslim army.

Fire can punish with fire.¹

17. It appears that in classical times of Islam, it was a prevalent practice among non-Muslims to take shelter behind enemy prisoners.² I have not found a single instance where Muslims were accused of this cowardly act when they forced their prisoners to fight against their own nation.

18. The Mālikite jurist, Khalil, expressly says that poisonous arrows are unlawful (نجس سم حرام).³ Jurists of other schools have not referred to the subject, so far as I know, owing apparently to non-employment of similar weapons by enemies in the countries where they lived.

19. Acts forbidden under treaties. Many fictitious cases of this kind are mentioned by ash-Shaibānī,⁴ which shows that it was common practice in those days to agree what not to do in the conduct of war regarding prisoners, devastation, cutting off the water-supply and the like.

It is to be noted that acts prohibited under treaties are forbidden only so long as the treaties last.⁵ Other prohibited acts form part of the injunctions of positive Muslim law, and they cannot become allowable even in reprisal; the immediate criminals and not their countrymen are to be considered responsible.⁶ Muslims are not allowed to hold

¹ Tirmidhīy, II, 298, ch. الحرق بالغاز; III, 214; Bukhārīy, 55 : 149; Ibn-Hishām, pp. 468-9.

² Cf. Abū-Ya'la السلطانية الأحكام, p. 25 (MS. Istanbul and Damascus). The expression قترى بأسارى المسلمين is met with frequently.

³ مختصر خليل, ch. Jihād; cf. however, *infra*, Ch. XVII, 3.

⁴ 'شرح السير الكبير' I, 200-05. Contrast with contemporary Christian Practice, Nys, Origines, p. 221.

⁵ 'فما استقاموا لكم فاستقيموا لهم' (Qur'ān, 9 : 7).

⁶ 'شرح السير الكبير' (a Ḥadīth quoted by the author, I., 185).

⁷ Qur'ān, 6 : 164, 17 : 15, 35 : 18, 49 : 7, 53 : 38.

slogans similar to : "We are not bound to keep faith with the Gentiles,"¹ enunciated, according to the Qurān, by Jews and reiterated by Papal bulls during the Middle Ages.²

A selection of Instructions to Commanders, issued by the Prophet and later Caliphs, will be found in an appendix at the end of this monograph.

¹ Qur'ān, 3 : 75.

² Cf. *supra*, Part I, Ch. X, paragraph 9.

CHAPTER XVI

Giving Quarter

QUARTER, which is based upon a Quranic verse ("And if anyone of the Associators seeketh thy protection (O Muḥammad), then protect him so that he may hear the Word of God, and afterwards convey him to his place of safety"¹), is defined by jurists as:

الامان التزام الكف عن التعرض لهم بالقتل والسبى حقا الله تعالى

i.e. Quarter means the practice of refraining from opposing them (i.e. the belligerents) through killing or capturing, for the sake of God.²

Quarter might be granted to enemy persons when they solicit it individually or *en masse*. If surrender is unconditional, they become prisoners of war, and their property booty. This occurs generally when they are besieged or fought in the open and reduced to great straits. In a conditional surrender, capitulation as it is termed, if conditions were accepted by the conqueror, those conditions must be faithfully observed, and Muslims must abide by their conditions (والمسلمون عند شروطهم).³

Quarter might also be granted to enemy persons without their soliciting it, through a general proclamation. So at the time of the conquest of Mecca, the Prophet made it known that all those persons were safe who entered the courtyard of Ka'bah or the house of their chief, Abū-Sufyān,

¹ Qur'ān, 9 : 6.

² Sarakhsiy, شرح السيرة الكبير, I. 189.

³ *Ibid.*, 185, on the authority of the Prophet.

or who shut up the doors of their houses,¹ or laid down their arms.² From this general amnesty a few were specifically excepted for their non-military offences.

The modes and expressions of quarter are discussed in great detail by Muslim jurists,³ which shows the great importance they attach to the fulfilling of terms accepted in good faith.

According to an oft-quoted Hadith of the Prophet, even the lowest of the Muslims may grant quarter which will be binding on the totality of the Muslim state.⁴ So this right is possessed not only by the combatants, potential or active, but even by others incapable of fight,⁵ by the sick⁵ and the blind,⁵ and even by slaves.⁶ The Prophet, more than once, rendered the quarter given by women valid.⁷ Naturally, the minors, the insane, and those under enemy control (e.g., prisoners, tourists, etc.) are excepted,⁸ so long as they are under non-Muslim jurisdiction. Their incapacity terminates as soon as they reach a place outside non-Muslim jurisdiction: Muslim territory or no-man's-land. (Cf. *supra*, Part 2, Ch. 3, last para).

Non-Muslim soldiers of the Muslim army, allies or otherwise, and even non-Muslim subjects of the Muslim state are

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 814.

² *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 39; *Asrār* of Dabūsīy, fol. 146b (MS. Walīud-dīn, Istanbul, No. 1402); *Tanbih* of Mas'ūdīy, p. 267; *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 131; *Kharāj* of Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far, ch. 19, §9 (MS. Istanbul).

³ Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, I, 189-362; فتاویٰ عالمگیری, *in loco*.

⁴ Do. I, 168-69.

⁵ *Ibid*, I, 189; Kāsānīy, VII, 107.

⁶ Do. I, 171-72, quoting a case of the time of the Caliph 'Umar re-Jundaisāpūr. See also Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, I, 2567-68.

⁷ Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, I, 191-92, Tirmidhiy, II, ch. امان المرأة, خراج لابی یوسف, p. 127.

⁸ Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, I, 192; Idem, *Mabsūṭ*, X, 71.

denied this right of granting quarter,¹ except when authorised by competent Muslims.² It is admitted that the commander of the Muslim army might notify that the enemy might not be given quarter by an individual Muslim other than the commander himself. Without such previous notification, the enemy might not be deprived of the right of soliciting quarter from individual Muslims.³ In the Constitution of the City-State of Madīnah, promulgated by the Prophet, (§. 20a, and 43) there are clear exceptions to the general right of granting quarter; and neither the Arab nor the Jewish citizens of the City-State could protect the Quraish or even their allies.

Quarter might for good reasons be revoked, but in such cases the enemy concerned must be allowed to return to the same position of safety and resistance as he was in when the quarter was granted.⁴

Quarter might even be temporary or conditional. The Prophet accorded Mu'āwiyah-ibn-Mughīrah three days to quit Madīnah.⁵ Jews of Khaibar were told that their quarter would be forfeited if they hid their property.⁶

Quarter is sometimes granted for persons absent, and necessary assurances are provided in order to create confidence. On one such occasion the Prophet sent his turban.⁷

If a quartered belligerent is unwittingly molested, right to damages accrues.⁸ The case of the two persons from Banū-ʿĀmir may be cited here, as an instance of the time of

¹ Sarakhṣīy, *السير الكبير*, I, 172.

² *Ibid.*, I, 291-92.

³ *Ibid.*, I, 356-359.

⁴ *Ibid.*, I, 357.

⁵ *Kāmil* of Ibn al-Aṭhīr, II, 127-28 (after the battle of Uḥud); *شرح السير الكبير*, I, 328.

⁶ Sarakhṣīy, I, 185-87.

⁷ Tabariy, *Hist.*, I, 1645.

⁸ *ذخيرة برهانية*, ch. XI (مسائل الامان).

the Prophet, which happened just before the battle of the Jews of Banū-an-Naḍīr of Madīnah.¹

Generally speaking, quarter is strictly a personal matter, and not transferable. If not expressly otherwise mentioned, it did not protect even the grantee's family, less so his property. This applied, however, only when one was in immediate danger.² On the other hand, when one was safe in his home, and quarter was solicited, then it automatically included life, property, wives, children of minor age, unmarried daughters and sisters, mothers and grandmothers, and aunts of both the mother and father's side.³ In case of license to trade, even the servants and slaves used to be included in the time of classical jurists.⁴

¹ *Ibn Hishām*, p. 652; *Ibn Sa'd*, 2/I, pp. 40-41; *Tabariy, Hist.*, I, 1449f.

² *Muḥīt* by Raḍīyuddīn as-Sarakhsīy, I, fol. 602b-603a (MS. Waliuddīn).

³ *Ibid*; Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, I, 233-38.

⁴ Sarakhsīy, *ibid*.

CHAPTER XV

Treatment of Prisoners of War

THIS subject naturally falls into two parts, viz., Muslim soldiers or other subjects made captive by the enemy, and the subjects and soldiers of the non-Muslim power taken prisoners by the Muslims.

1. *Muslim Prisoners.*

A Muslim prisoner is bound to observe faithfully his parole and honour.¹ If, however, he had given no parole, he is at liberty, if he likes and is able, to escape or otherwise do harm to his captors.²

As regards Muslim subjects, it is the duty of the Muslim state to seek their release by giving money from the public treasury.³ The Qur'ān clearly lays down that a portion of the state income is to be allotted for *freeing the necks*,⁴ which is interpreted⁵ as aiding the prisoners and slaves to get themselves freed. There are clear traditions of the Prophet also to the same effect recorded by Bukhārī and others; for instance: "Manage the release of the prisoner (فكوا العاني),"⁶ As regards practice, I have not found any precedent of the time of the Prophet when ransom was paid for the release

¹ Sarakhsīy *idem*, IV, 223, citing actual cases of the time of the Prophet.

² *Ibid.*, p. 219ff.

³ *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 121.

⁴ Qur'ān, 9:60.

⁵ See any commentary on the Qur'ān *in loco*. Also Ibn-Taimīyah, *op. cit.*, p. 17: (في الرقاب يدخل فيه اعادة المكاتبين و اقتداء الاسرى)

⁶ Bukhārī, 56:171.

of Muslim prisoners. Exchange of prisoners will, however, be dealt with later. The Caliph 'Umar, however, ordered : " Every Muslim prisoner in the hands of non-Muslims must be relieved by means of the Muslim state-treasury."¹ Regarding later times, al-Maqrīzī records and describes more than half a dozen general releases of Muslim prisoners by their enemy.² Historians of foreign countries have also recorded it. Finlay, for instance, says : " Regular exchange of prisoners with the Muslims commenced as early as the reign of Constantine V, A.D. 769. In the year 797 a new clause was inserted in a treaty for the exchange of prisoners, binding the contracting parties to release all superannuated captives on the payment of a fixed sum for each individual."³

Their wills and testaments, when received in Muslim territory are to be valid for the property of the deceased Muslim prisoner situate under Muslim jurisdiction.⁴

2. *Enemy Prisoners captured by Muslims.*

As regards taking prisoners, there are two Qur'ānic verses :

i. Now when ye meet in battle those who disbelieve, then it is the smiting of the necks until ye have routed them ; then making fast of bonds ; and afterwards either grace or ransom till the war lay down its burdens. (47 : 4).

ii. It is not for any Prophet to have captives until he

¹ *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 121 :

(كل اسير كان في ايدي المشركين من المسلمين ففكاكه من بيت مال المسلمين)

² *Khīṭaṭ* of Maqrīzī, ch. Dār aṣ-Ṣanā'ah. Cf. *Kāmil* of Ibn al-Aṭhīr, VIII, 269, anno. 326.

³ Finlay, II, 89, cited by *Khudā Bakhsh* in the English translation of Von Kremer's *Orient*, p. 323, note.

⁴ *Sarakhsīy*, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 229.

hath routed (the enemy) in the land. (8 : 67).

—(In both these verses the verb *اثخن* occurs which means to route, to dominate, to subjugate. Cf. for this expression *History of Ṭabarīy*, I, p. 1855, l. 11, and also the *Tafsīr* of the same author *in loco*. Cf. also *تاويلات القرآن* by al-Māturīdīy (d. 333), who commenting on the latter verse gives it similar meaning :

حتى يثخن في الأرض، أى يغلب - حتى إذا اخذ الغداه
و سرحهم بعد ما غلب في الأرض ليكون رجوعهم الى غير منفعة
و شركة (مخطوطة لاله لى في استانبول و خيرة ذوالقدر جنگ
جامعه عثمانيه).

According to Muslim law, a prisoner *qua* prisoner cannot be killed, Ibn Rushd even records a consensus of the Companions of the Prophet to the same effect.¹ This does not preclude the trial and punishment of prisoners for crimes beyond rights of belligerency. For this we possess the high authority of the practice of the Prophet when two prisoners of the battle of Badr were beheaded by his order.² Muslim jurists clearly recognise that a prisoner cannot be held responsible for mere acts of belligerency :

و كذلك اهل الحرب لا يضمنون بالاجماع ما اذغوا علينا من
الاموال والنفوس و ان اسلموا او صاروا ذمة لنا و لغيرهم و تدينهم
و منعهم و كانوا كالمسلمين و كذلك اخذ المال.

i.e. Similarly there is a unanimity that belligerents would not be held responsible for damage they inflicted on Muslims regarding life and property. This would be so even when they embrace Islam or become Muslim subjects. For they did that conscientiously and in accordance with the dictates of their religion and at a time when they were authorised to do that. So they were on the same footing as Muslims. The same is true regarding the

¹ *بداية المجتهد*, I, 351 (ed. Muṣṭafā Bābī Press).

² Ibn-Hishām, p. 458. Both were inveterate foes of Islam ; their release was dangerous for Islam.

capture of property.¹

Treatment during captivity has been the subject of liberal provisions. As regards the prisoners of Badr, the Prophet ordered : " Take heed of the recommendation to treat the prisoners fairly " ² (استوصوا بالأسارى خيرا). The consequence was that many Muslim soldiers contented themselves with dates and fed the prisoners in their charge with bread.³ Abū-Yūsuf remarks that prisoners must be fed and well treated until a decision is reached regarding them.⁴ They are not to be charged for their food, the cost of which is to be borne by the capturing Muslim state.⁵ The Qur'ān lays down : " Lo ! the righteous shall.....[go to Paradise]..... (because) they perform the vow and fear a day whereof the evil is widespreading, and *feed with food* the needy wretch, the orphan and *the prisoner, for love of Him, (saying) : we feed you, for the sake of God only, we wish for no reward nor thanks from you.*"⁶ Prisoners are to be protected from heat and cold, and the like. If they have no clothes, these might be provided—as was the practice of the Prophet.⁷ If they are in any trouble or discomfiture, this is to be done away with as far as possible, for which also there is authority of the practice of the Prophet.⁸ He has the right to draw up wills for the property at home.⁹ Obviously these would be communicated to the enemy authorities through a proper channel. Among prisoners, a mother is not to be separated from her child,¹⁰ nor other near relatives from each other.¹¹ The position and dignity of prisoners are to be respected

¹ Dabūsīy, *Asrār*, fol. 148a.

² Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, I. 1337-38.

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Kharāj*, p. 88.

⁵ *Ibid.*

⁶ Qur'ān, 76 : 5-9.

⁷ Bukhārīy, 56 : 142, Ibn-Sa'd, 2/1, p. 111.

⁸ *Kāmil* of Ibn al-Athīr, II 99. See also *ch. Prisoners of Badr, etc.* in any *Seerat-work*.

⁹ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السيرة الكبير, IV, 229.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, IV., 241-43.

¹¹ *Ibid.*

according to individual cases.¹ A tradition is also attributed to the Prophet : " Pay respect to the dignitary of a nation who is brought low."² There is no evidence in early Muslim history of exacting labour from prisoners. If they tried to escape or otherwise violate discipline, they might be punished.³ If they succeeded in their attempt to escape and reach safety (مامن) and are again captured, their previous offence of escaping might not be ground for punishment,⁴ except perhaps the breach of parole.

Muslim law leaves to the discretion of the commander to decide whether prisoners of war are to be (a) beheaded, (b) enslaved, (c) released on paying ransom, (d) exchanged with Muslim prisoners, or (e) released gratis. We shall treat them separately.

(a) *Beheading of Prisoners.*

We have already seen, prisoners surrendering on conditions, are treated according to the terms of their capitulation. On unconditional surrender, mere past acts of belligerency constitute no ground for inflicting capital punishment. No doubt, crimes other than these might bring punishment on the prisoner. According to Abū-Yūsuf, a prisoner might be beheaded only in the interest of Islam, though he also records many opinions of high authority that their beheading was disliked (*makrūh*).⁵ We have seen that unanimity was reached among the Companions of the

¹ For treatment of the daughter of Muqauqis, cf. Maqrizīy, *خطط*, I, 297; *تأخفة الاحباب* (MS. Berlin); *ان لاولاد الملوك شانا ليس لغيرهن*, etc.

² Jāhiz, *البيان والتبيين*, I, 22 (*ارحوا عزيز قوم ذل*); Ibn 'Asakir: *اذا اتاكم كريم قوم فاكرموه*

³ These things fall under the discretionary powers of the commanders.

⁴ Do.

⁵ *Kharāj*, p. 121.

Prophet not to behead prisoners of war.¹ In short, capital punishment for prisoners of war is only permissible in extreme cases of necessity and in the higher interests of the State.

(b) *Enslavement.*

There is no verse in the Qur'ān directly permitting enslavement, yet some indirect mention is found in the following :

O Prophet ! Lo ! We have made lawful unto thee thy wives unto whom thou hast paid their bride-money, and those whom thy right hand possesseth of those whom God hath given thee as spoils of war.....(33 : 50).

In the practice of the Prophet, however, though few, there are instances of it. The females and children of the Jewish tribe of Banū-Quraizah were, by the decision of the arbitrator nominated by themselves, enslaved and distributed as booty.² This arbitral award was in conformity with the Jewish personal law.³ The captives of the Arab tribe of Hawāzin, in the year 8 H. were distributed among the troops, but later on all of them were set free in answer to the supplication of the Hawāzinites after their conversion to Islam. This manumission was not decreed as a right, but the Muslim soldiers were prompted by the personal example of the Prophet, and those who would not liberate their share, were compensated by the state-treasury.⁴ A little earlier, the Arabian tribe of Banul-Muṣṭaliq had also incurred the same fate of losing females and children to the Muslim army. This time the Prophet married a girl from among the captives, who happened to be the daughter of the

¹ Ibn-Rushd, *إدبایة المحتشد*, I, 351. (ed. Muṣṭafā Bābī Press).

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 689.

³ Deuteronomy, XX, 10-14.

⁴ *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 877-78, Ṭabarī and others *in loco*.

chieftain of the tribe, after liberating her. And the Muslim soldiery was persuaded to free all the enslaved persons.¹ The prisoners of Banul-'Anbar were set free either gratuitously or on ransom.²

The policy of the Prophet reached a climax when, as is said, he decreed that Arabs could not be enslaved (لارق على عربى).³ The Caliph 'Umar issued orders that peasants, artisans and professionals of belligerent countries should not be enslaved.⁴ The Qur'ān exhorted liberation of slaves,⁵ and provided that the income of the Muslim state should partly be allotted for the manumission of slaves.⁶ Another verse⁷ was interpreted by the Caliph 'Umar⁸ to mean that if a Muslim slave wanted to work and thus pay off his value to his master, the master was not in a position to refuse the offer.

Thus it may be inferred that though Islam has done much to minimize slavery, it has not abolished it altogether. *Certainly* it is not obligatory always to enslave prisoners of war, yet it cannot be denied that the supreme commander of an army has the choice to accord the prisoners either enslavement or any other treatment. A word of caution may not be out of place. *Slave* in Islam does not convey the same idea as in other civilisations. For a slave of a Muslim has a right to equality with his master in food, clothing and dwelling. It cannot be denied that it was an easy method of proselytising non-Muslims which is the prime policy of a

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 729.

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 983.

³ *Mabsūt* of Sarakhsīy, X, 118.

⁴ *Kanzul-'Ummāl*, Vol. 2, p. 314.

⁵ Qur'ān, 90: 13, 2: 177: freeing of slaves is an atonement of many an offence for which cf. Qur'ān, 4: 92, 5: 89, 58: 3.

⁶ Qur'ān, 9: 60.

⁷ Qur'ān, 24: 33. (فكاتبوهم ان علمتم فيهم خيرا).

⁸ *Shiblī*, *al-Fārūq*, citing Bukhārīy.

Muslim state.¹

For treatment of and laws governing slaves in Islam, I may refer to my monograph *رومی اور اسلامی ادارۂ غلامی* published by the Law Union of the Osmania University, which contains also a bibliography.

(c) *Ransom.*

The Qur'ān has legalised releasing prisoners of war on ransom (cf. 47 : 4) and there are many instances in the life of the Prophet of the liberating of them with various kinds of ransom and compensation. So they were required sometimes to teach a number of Muslim boys calligraphy;² sometimes money in gold or silver was demanded;³ sometimes other goods, for instance spears⁴ and munition of war, were accepted. It is not our concern whether the ransom was paid by the prisoner from his private purse or he was aided in it by his friends or government. The Caliph 'Umar II released full one hundred thousand prisoners and acquired the city of Malaṭīyah from the Byzantines.⁵

¹ In the archives of Pondicherry, that jāgīr bestowed by the Nizām on the French East India Co., there are still preserved the proceedings disposing of the command of the emperor of France received to the effect that all people in French possessions be forced to baptise their slaves within a short time. 'Cf. No. 29, Édīt du Roy donné à Versailles au mois de Mars, 1724, art. 2: "Tous les esclaves seront instruits dans la religion catholique apostolique et Romaine, et Baptisés, ordonnons aux habitants qui achepteront des nègres de les faire instruire et Baptiser dans le temps convenable à peine d'amende arbitraire. Enjoignons aux Directeurs généraux de la Compagnie De Indes et à tous ses officiers d'y tenir exactement la main." It is signed by Dupleix and others.'

But Islam does not allow compulsion to convert even slaves to Islam.

² Ibn-Sa'd, 2/I, p. 14; *Musnad* of Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 246-47.

³ *Ibn-Ḥishām*, p. 462, etc.

⁴ Ibn-Ḥajar, *Iṣābah*, No. 8336; Kattānīy, *نظام الحكومة النبوية*, II, 38.

⁵ Abū-'Abdallāh Muḥammad-ibn-Salāmah-ibn-Ja'far. *عيون المعارف* و فنون اخبار الخلائف (MS. Topkapusarai), fol. 77a.

(d) Exchange of Prisoners.

Of exchange, a special kind of ransom, there are many instances in the life of the Prophet: sometimes one for one,¹ at others one for more.² In later times, it developed into a complicated institution involving the release of thousands of prisoners at a time. In certain treaties the value of the ransom of prisoners was fixed in definite sum of money.³

It is natural that vehicles employed for the purpose of conveying exchangeable prisoners—cartels as they are called—should be immune during their journey to and fro.⁴ It is also obvious that during the time of this immune journey they should not take part in hostilities on pain of losing that immunity.

(e) Gratuitous Release.

The Qur'ān has recommended this when hostilities have ceased (cf. 47 : 4). There are not a few instances of it in the life of the Prophet. From the battle of Badr until his death, one comes across gratuitous releases of prisoners every now and then.⁵ There were also cases of release on parole that they would no more take part in hostilities against Muslims.⁶

Before the booty—in which prisoners according to Muslim law are included—is distributed among the capturers, the commander is free to deal with the prisoners as he

¹ Tabariy, *Hist.*, I, 1345-46, 1862.

² *Ṣaḥīḥ* of Muslim, V. 150, ch. (التنفيذ و فداء المسلمين بالأسرى).

³ Cf. *supra* a few pages above, in the beginning of this section citing Finlay.

⁴ Cf. Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, III, 327-28:

(لثلا ينسبوا الى الغدر و ليطمئنوا اليهم في مثل هذا في المستقبل).

⁵ Tabariy, *Hist.*, I, 1354, for instance.

⁶ Cf. any biography of the Prophet, prisoners of Badr, etc., e.g., *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 471.

likes.¹ But after they are enslaved and distributed, the consent² of each recipient is necessary in all those acts of the commander which affect adversely the possessory rights of the owners of the now enslaved prisoners. The prisoners of Hawāzin provide a good precedent, when the Prophet allowed compensation from the public treasury to all those who were not willing to part with their booty of slaves. (Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, 1675-79).

¹ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 132.

² شرح السير الكبير, III, 39.

CHAPTER XVI

Choice given to Inhabitants of Annexed Territory

EX-ENEMY subjects of occupied territory are expected to remain peaceful, law-abiding and in no way hostile to the conqueror. But they are not forced to become subjects of the new state if their district or country is finally annexed ; but they are given a year¹ in which to quit the territory or become the subjects of the Muslim state, their new master. It is not necessary to accept all the inhabitants as subjects ; some of them might be expelled. The Caliph 'Umar deprived the Jews, the Greeks and the bandits (الروم و اللصوص) of the choice of living in Jerusalem.²

If they wished to become the subjects of the Muslim state, they are required to pay the protection tax (*jizyah*) or whatever might be agreed upon between them and their new government.³ After the act of naturalisation is executed, they become ordinary subjects. For certain peculiarities of non-Muslim subjects see *supra*, Part 2, Chapter 4, Section *b*.

¹ Māwardīy, *op. cit.*, p. 132.

² Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, I, 2405-06.

³ For instance, the famous pact of the Caliph 'Umar with Christians of the tribe of Banū-Taghlib who resented the term *jizyah*, and agreed to pay certain other taxes in increased ratio. Cf. Abū-Yūsuf, etc. *in loco*.

CHAPTER XVII

Acts Permitted

NOW we will enumerate acts permitted by Muslim Law in the actual conduct of war.

1. Enemy combatants might be killed,¹ wounded,² pursued³ and made captive.⁴ Non-combatants might be killed in defence only and not otherwise. The jurists of the Abbasid period made an exception regarding children, women, and men incapable of fighting through old age or otherwise—these might be killed, they say,⁵ if they are rulers, commanders, or advisers in tactics and strategy, and it is expected that their death would produce adverse effects on the enemy. Sometimes the Qur'anic expression, "then fight with the ringleaders of Disbelief"⁶ is also referred to for support in this connexion. Kāsānīy explains :

And the principle therein is that all those who are potentially capable of fighting, may be killed, no matter whether they actually fight or not. And all those who are potentially incapable of fighting must not be killed except when they fight actually or potentially, such as by means of opinion, influence, inciting and the like.⁷

2. Recourse might be had to ruses.⁸ The Prophet is

¹ Qur'ān, 47 : 4, 8 : 12.

² *Ibid.*

³ Qur'ān, 4 : 104, 3 : 172.

⁴ Qur'ān, 47 : 4, 8 : 12.

⁵ Sarakhṣīy, *Sharḥ as-Siyar al-Kabir*, I, 34 ; cf. also *supra* "Acts Forbidden," No. 2.

⁶ Qur'ān, 9 : 12.

⁷ *Badā'i* of Kāsānīy, VII, 101.

⁸ Bukhārīy, 55 : 157 ; Muslim, V, 143 ; Sarakhṣīy, *شرح السیر الكبير*, I, 83-86.

reported in his warlike expeditions generally to have given currency to apparently misleading things (تورية)¹ using ambiguous expressions² and the like to consternate the enemy. "War is a ruse" (الحرب خدعة)³ is a famous dictum in Muslim military literature which is also attributed to the Prophet.

2a. Propaganda may require a separate treatment. There are cases in the time of the Prophet when secret agents were sent who sowed discord between the different sections of the enemy and his allied,⁴ and who disseminated false news in order to discourage the enemy,⁵ or to extract some other benefit from the enemy.⁶ Once a famine was afflicting Mecca, and the Prophet sent a handsome contribution of five hundred gold coins towards the relief work. The Meccan magnates, though they dared not refuse and return the contribution, at once discerned in it a powerful weapon "to win the affection of the youngsters of Mecca" (ما يريد محمد بهذا الا ان يخدع شبانا)⁷. The famous verse of the Qur'ān on the Islamic budget⁸ also allots a portion of the income for propaganda (والمولفة قلوبهم). According to Abū-Ya'lā al-Farrā', this Qur'anic term includes four categories :

1. Those whose hearts are to be won to aid Muslims.
2. To persuade them to abstain from doing harm to Muslims.
3. To induce them to embrace Islam.

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 894.

² *Ṭabariy, Hist.*, I, 1302-03.

³ *Sarakhsiy, السير الكبير*, I, 83.

⁴ *Ibn-Hishām*, 683-84.

⁵ *Ibn-Hajar, Isābah*, No. 3074.

⁶ *Ṭabariy, Hist.*, I, 1586.

⁷ *Sarakhsiy, السير الكبير*, I, 69.

⁸ Qur'ān, 9:60. cf. my article in *مجلة نظاميه*, Hyderabad, Rabī I, 1357 H.

4. To give inducement to others through them.¹

Of course most of them will be non-Muslims, and our author has also recognised it explicitly.

3. The enemy might be attacked with all kinds of weapons.² In this matter ships and forts were regarded as the same.³ Of course unnecessary bloodshed is to be avoided. In the time of the Prophet, one comes across superior strategy and better tactics in the Muslim army as also new formations, new methods of defence. Ditch warfare was not known in Ḥijāz before the Prophet. The element of surprise was also included as much as possible, which diminished bloodshed and procured easy surrender.⁴ The Caliph Mu'āwiyah used incendiary materials (محرقات) in his marine expeditions.⁵ S. P. Scot records that the Muslims of Spain used in the seventh century of Hijrah what might be considered a crude form of cannon.⁶ During the Crusades the Muslims used a kind of marine mine.⁷ During the same time, Salāḥuddīn managed to send his ships

¹ Abū-Ya'la al-Farrā', *al-Aḥkām as-Sultānīyah*, p. 116 (ed. Egypt, 1357 H.)

² Qur'ān, 8:60 (واعدوا لهم ما استطعتم من قوة), Sarakhsiy.

شرح السیر الكبير, III, 212:

”ولا بأس للمسلمين ان يحرقوا حصون المشركين بالنار او يفرقوها بالماء و ان ينصبوا عليها المجانيق و ان يقطعوا عنهم الماء و ان يجعلوها في ماءهم الدم والعذرة و السم حتى يفسدوه عليهم“

cf. on the contrary the opinion of the Mālikite Khalīl, that poisoned arrows are forbidden, *supra*, "Acts Forbidden," No. 18.

³ Sarakhsiy, شرح السیر الكبير, III, 265.

⁴ Cf. *Revue des Études Islamiques*, 1939: *Les champs de bataille au temps du Prophète*; مجموعه تحقیقات علمیہ, Osmania University, Vol. VII, عهد نبوی کے میدان جنگ—both by me.

⁵ شرح السیر الكبير, III, 213.

⁶ *History of Moorish Empire in Europe*, III, 634 (anno. 1249 of Chr. era).

⁷ Lawrence, *Principles of International Law*, p. 511.

to ports besieged by Christians by placing pigs on the deck and clothing the sailors in Christian dress.¹ An author of at least several hundred years ago mentions even poison gases. He says :

و اما المكايذة في الحرب كالنيران والد خاخين والمياه المدبرة
والروائح المنقنة القاتلة لخراب الحصون والقلاع وادهاش العدو جائزة-

As for acts of belligerency in war, like fires, smokes, prepared liquids, and ill-smelling deadly odours (? gases), for causing damage to forts and castles and horrifying the enemy, they are permitted.²

The name of the author is not known ; the manuscript was copied in 1231 H. Various formulæ for the preparation of poison gases are given in another old MS. in Arabic. Attacks with smoke are mentioned and upheld by such an old author as Burhānuddīn al-Marghīnānīy (d. 616).³ Ash-Shaibānīy allows surprise attacks, burning forts and flooding them with water.⁴ Instruments for producing terrifying and shrill sounds as a consternater were resorted to by Arabs and other Muslim peoples.⁵

4. Assassination : It is allowed in Muslim law, and may perhaps be justified on the ground that often it diminishes greater bloodshed and discord, and it is resorted to as the lesser of two evils. In the life of the Prophet there are several clear instances of it. The expeditions dispatched by

¹ *Kāmil* of Ibn al-Aṭhīr, XII, 34; Ibn-Shaddād: النواذر السلطانية والمكاسن الموسمية, p. 178.

² رسالة في كيفية الحرب والاسرى والمرتدين, MS. Cairo, Fiqh Ḥanafīy, No. 1080, ch. 27.

³ المكايذ الحربية, MS. Hamidié, Istanbul, No. 189, pp. 308-17.

⁴ المحيط البرهاني, Vol. III, ch. 23. (MS. Yānī Jāmi', Istanbul).

⁵ Shāibānīy, *Aṣl*, ch. الحرب, (MS. Aya Sofia, Istanbul).

⁶ Cf. *Islamic Culture*, April 1941: 'A Note on Noise as a Consternater in Islamic Armies,' pp. 240ff.

him against Abul-Ḥuqaiq,¹ Ka'b-ibn-al-Ashraf,² Abū-Rāfi'³ and Sufyān-ibn-Anas⁴ were successful, and the one against Abū-Sufyān⁵ failed to achieve the desired aim.

5. Instances of night attacks, too, are not lacking in the history of the time of the Prophet. Muslim historians have recorded even the very watchwords used on these occasions.⁶ On one such occasion two parties of the Muslims came into clash with each other by mistake, and some blood was shed before it was discovered. The Prophet agreed that it was by mistake, and it was left unpunished.⁷

6. In a previous chapter it was stated what kind of people might not be killed except in self-defence. In the confusion of a night attack, or when catapults or other war machines cause damage from an invisible distance, the unintentional killing of such non-combatants is exempt from punishment; but soldiers must be warned not to aim at them.⁸

7. It is necessary sometimes, in sieges for instance, that an enemy should be fired at from a distance. Often in besieged places are found not only non-combatants but also neutrals and even Muslim subjects such as tourists or prisoners, etc.⁹ Again, sometimes, the enemy takes shelter behind women, children or even Muslim prisoners. In all such cases Muslim soldiers are enjoined simply not to aim at

¹ Tabariy, *Hist.*, I, 1379.

² *Ibid.*, p. 1372; Bukhārīy, 54:15.

³ Tabariy, I, 1375-76; Bukhārīy, 54: 16.

⁴ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السير الكبير, I, 79.

⁵ Tabariy *Ikhṭilāf al-Fuqahā'*, fol. 18b. (MS. Istanbul), *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p.68; *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 994.

⁶ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 17, *Musnad* of Ibn-Ḥanbal, IV, 65, *Māwardīy*, p. 60.

⁷ *Muḥīṭ Burhānīy*, ch. 23; cf. *infra* ch. XXVI, 5.

⁸ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السير الكبير, III, 213, Bukhārīy, 54: 146.

⁹ *Muḥīṭ* of Radiuddīn Sarakhṣīy, I, 569, citing a case from the time of the Prophet.

the non-combatants and non-belligerents.¹

8. Enemy property may be destroyed or captured. This will be discussed in a separate chapter.

9. The water-supply of the enemy may be cut off or in some other way may be made unusable² for them. The Prophet cut it off from the enemy during the battles of Badr³ and Khaibar⁴ with great effect.

10. Food and fodder may be obtained from an enemy country.⁵ There are indications to the effect that the Muslim armies sent by the Prophet used to pay for what they obtained wherever practicable. So Tirmidhiy records :

معنى الحديث انهم كانوا يخرجون في الغزو فيمرون بقوم
ولا يجدون من الطعام ما يشترون بالثمن و قال النبي صلعم
ان اباؤا ان يبيعوا الا ان تاخذوا كرها فتخذوا . . . و قد روى
عن عمر بن الخطاب (رضه) انه كان يامر نبحو هذا .

Translation :—"The meaning of the *Hādīth* is that they used to go in military expeditions and pass by people who would not sell them the requisites for cash. It was for this that the Prophet said : If they decline to sell and will not surrender except by force, then use force... It is related of 'Umar that he used to give similar instructions.⁶"

On the other hand, there are also indications of food and

¹ *الأحكام السلطانية*, III, 216, Abū-Ya'la, شرح السير الكبير, Sarakhsīy, fol. 25 a, b.

² Cf. No. 3 above, note 2.

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 439-40.

⁴ *الأحكام السلطانية*, III, 213, شرح السير الكبير, Sarakhsīy.

⁵ *الأخبار الطوال*, Dīnawarīy, p. 120:—

كان المسلمون اذا فنيت ازوادهم و اعلافهم جردوا الخيل فاخذت البر
حتي هبط على المكان الذي يريدون و يغيرون فيمنصرفون بالطعام
والعلف والمواشى.

⁶ Tirmidhiy, I, 301. ed. Bulaq.

fodder being obtained by what is termed requisition.¹ Unlike other captures, food and fodder are not considered booty, *i.e.*, not shared by the Government nor divided among the whole army, but the captor becomes the sole owner.²

11. Individuals or localities may collectively be fined or otherwise punished for indiscipline or hostility to the occupying forces.

These are but a few cases recording law and practice. It is very difficult to give a comprehensive list of what acts are permitted. The general principle may help to a great extent that everything not prohibited is permissible (الأصل الإباحة).³

¹ Dīnawarīy, *الأخبار الطوال*, p. 120. More, *infra*, under chapter "Private Property."

² Cf. any law book, ch. Booty. For instance, Ibn-Rushd, *بداية* "المجتهدو" *in loco*, cites the Practice of the time of the Prophet.

³ Cf. *supra*, Part I, Ch. VI. §10.

CHAPTER XVIII

Spies

IN olden times spies could not have done so much harm to the other side as in modern times when spying has developed from an art into a veritable science. Nevertheless elaborate precautions were taken even in olden times to hide news from the enemy. The Prophet sometimes closed all roads to private persons¹ (حبس الطرق) in order to prevent infiltration of news of military importance.

Practically no distinction is made in Muslim law between spies of war and spies of peace. All those persons who obtain or attempt to obtain information useful to an enemy, and try to transmit it to the enemy, are considered as spies. Even a Muslim subject may play that mean rôle and incur the same punishment as an alien.

Naturally less formality is observed regarding aliens suspected of fifth column activities. Two cases of the time of the Prophet may be noted with interest.

(a) The treaty of Ḥudaibīyah became invalid owing to its being violated by the Meccans. Great preparations were secretly undertaken to avenge the infraction of the treaty. A Muslim of old standing, Ḥāṭib-ibn-Abī-Balta'ah guessed where these preparations were directed. He wrote a letter to his friends in Mecca to the effect that preparations were ahead and that might be they were directed against Mecca, so Meccans should take precautions. He intended thereby a better treatment of his private property situate in Mecca.

¹ Abū-Yūsuf, *Kharāj*, p. 131.

The letter was intercepted, and when the Prophet was satisfied that neither was the letter motivated by ill-will to Islam nor had it done any harm, he pardoned Ḥāṭib in view of his long meritorious services, including his taking part in the battle of Badr.¹

(b) Al-Bukhārī quotes a few details of an incident in which the Prophet, during a certain expedition, ordered a suspected spy to be pursued and captured, who was later beheaded.² We do not know what opportunity was given him to plead or how he came to be suspected.

Abū-Yūsuf is of opinion that non-Muslim spies, no matter whether subjects or aliens, must be given capital punishment, and those who profess Islam might be imprisoned or physically tortured.³ His contemporary ash-Shaibānī regards espionage as less harmful than robbery, and so he thinks that subjects of the Muslim state may not be beheaded for espionage. Regarding aliens, however, he too has no mercy.⁴

No distinction is made, as far as punishment is concerned, between a male and a female spy.⁵ Yet a minor should on no account be made to suffer the supreme penalty, say Muslim jurists.⁶

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 810, *Sarakhsīy*, *شرح السیر الكبير*, IV, 226.

² *Bukhārīy*, 56: 173.

³ *Abū-Yūsuf*, *Kharāj*, p. 117.

⁴ *Cf.* *شرح السیر الكبير*, IV, 226-27.

⁵ *Sarakhsīy*, *شرح السیر الكبير*, IV, 226-27.

⁶ *Ibid.*

CHAPTER XIX

Uniforms

VARIOUS devices have been made to distinguish friend from foe during the frenzy of a battle. Its purpose is twofold—comfort and distinctiveness.

The Prophet is reported to have worn during military marches, special cloaks.¹ There is also mention of prominent warriors wearing distinctive costumes during a battle.² Yet there is no evidence of any organised attempt in the time of the Prophet to provide all the members of the expedition with uniforms, except that he is reported to have ordered on the day of Badr that Muslims should wear distinctive signs, adding that the angels who came on that day to the help of the Muslims also wore such signs.³ A صوفه (sort of woollen crest ?) is said to have been adopted by Muslims on that occasion.⁴ The life of the Prophet shows that he had an ingenious device which served both during night and day. He instructed watchwords for each campaign, and during a combat the cries of the watchword could fairly easily distinguish friend from foe.⁵

Greater uniformity of dress is reported in the time of the

¹ Bukhārī, 54 : 90.

² Ṭabarī, *Hist.*, I, p. 1393, ll. 14-15 ; *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 448, etc.

³ Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, IV, 54, commenting on the verse 3 : 125.

⁴ *Ibid.* (اول ما كان الصوف ليومئذ يعني بدر).

⁵ *Musnad* of Ibn-Hanbal, IV, 289, also my *عہد نبوی کے میدان جنگ* ; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 17.

Caliph 'Alī.¹ The Abbasid Mu'taṣim and Mutawakkil are reported to have raised uniformly dressed armies.²

¹ Mas'ūdīy, *Murūj*, IV, 309ff. (ed. Europe).

² Ameer 'Alī, *A Short Hist. of the Saracens*, p. 431 (ed. 1921) : "all regulars were given light brown cloaks."

CHAPTER XX

Flags of Truce

THE sign of surrender in ancient times seems to have been mere holding-up of hands and laying-down of arms. In the time of the Caliph 'Alīy we come across the expression "flag of truce."¹ But the technical branch of Muslim military science has not yet been thoroughly studied.²

Mention may also be made here of the raising of the copies of the Qur'ān by the troops of Mu'āwiyah in the battle of Şiffin on which the opposing army held up their arms.³

* * *

So far we have dealt with enemy persons. In the following we propose to discuss enemy property as affected by war.

¹ Yūsuf-ibn-Muḥammad al-Andalusīy, *الأعلام بالحروب الواقعة في صدر الإسلام*, fol. 14a, b.

² See, however, Fries, *Heerwesen der Araber zur Zeit der Umayyaden*, Kiel, 1920 ; Wüstenfeld, *Heerwesen der Muhammedaner*, Göttingen, 1880 ; *Encyclopædia of Islam*, s.v. Ṭabalkhāna, etc. ; Lord Munster : *فهارسة الكتب* التى نرغب ان نبتاعها lithographed 1840 ; a copy also in the Hyderabad State Library which reads a very interesting and descriptive catalogue.

³ Ṭabarīy, *Hist.* I, 3352-53.

CHAPTER XXI

Enemy Property

Preliminary Remarks.

PROPERTY may be movable or immovable. It may be owned by private individuals, or by the State. Even if it is un-owned by anybody, yet the very fact of its situation within the territorial jurisdiction of a State renders it as belonging to that State. In a broad sense, all the land within the territory of a State, be it owned by private individuals or by the government itself, is supposed to be the property of the State. For, foreign aggression against the property of a private citizen in a State is as much an insult to the State as one committed against the property owned by the State. The notion is based on the idea that the world and all that is therein is God's,¹ and He bequeaths it to whomever He pleases;² and that the ruler of a country functions as an agent of God in that part of the world.³ Hence the legal dictum that all the parts of a Muslim territory lie under the authority of the Muslim ruler (ان نواحى دارالاسلام تحت يد) (امام المسلمين).⁴ There is a tradition of the Prophet :

عادى الارض لله و لرسوله ثم لكم من بعد - فمن احياء
ارضا ميتة فله و ليس لمحتجر حق بعد ثلاث سنين-

i.e., The 'Ādite land belongs to God and to His Messenger. And thereafter does it to you. So whoever colonises a derelict land, it will be his. Yet no one has

¹ Qur'an, 7 : 128.

² *Ibid.*

³ Qur'an, 38 : 26, 6 : 165.

⁴ *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 93.

a right to an enclosure after three years [if he has not developed it].¹

A commentator says :

يقال للشئ القديم "عادي" نسبة الى قوم عاد لقدم
زمانهم سواء كان لهم او لغيرهم . والمراد ههنا ما كان قبل
الاسلام في غير ملك . أحد أى في مكان ليس له مالك .

Translation : An old thing is called 'Ādite, attributed to the people of 'Ād' on account of the remote antiquity of their time, no matter whether it really belonged to them or not. Here it means a piece of land which was unowned in the time before Islam, that is, situate in place which had no owner.²

Discussing the implications of this tradition, Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far says :

وجلة الامر مالر يقع عليه ملك مسلم ولا معاهد فان حكم
ذلك الى الامار يقطعه من اختار-

i.e., To resume the matter, all that is owned neither by a Muslim nor a friendly foreigner, will be at the disposal of the ruler who may enfeoff it to whomever he pleases.³

It is to be noted that not all the property of a State is always to be found on its own territory, and not an inconsiderable extent may lie in other countries. Property belonging to embassies, to citizens temporarily residing or trading abroad, also debts and trusts, are examples thereof.

The general principle guiding Muslim law in the treatment of property belonging to an enemy has been explained thus :

The principle is that all property capable of being

¹ *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 37 ; *Kharāj* of Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far, part 7, chapter 5 (MS. Köprülü, Istanbul).

² شرح كتاب الخراج لابی يوسف by 'Abdal-'Aziz-bin-Muḥammed ar-Raḥabīy, fol. 73a (MS. Lāléli No. 1609. Istanbul).

³ *Op. cit.*, part 7, ch. 6 (MS. Istanbul).

transferred from one ownership to another may be made booty, not otherwise. For, possession by means of occupation is just like possession by means of the other methods which effect ownership. Thus whatever may be owned by virtue of other methods, may pre-eminently be so by means of occupation.¹

The different kinds of property described above are treated in different manners, as under :

1. *State Property.*

It may either be movable or immovable, and it may either fall under the general exchequer or be reserved for the royal household. For its special importance, we begin with the territory of an enemy state.

(i) *Territory*.—By conquest and occupation of a territory, the sovereignty thereof—with the obligation of protection and right of allegiance—is transferred to the conqueror. The occupation, whether permanent or strategical and temporary, gives the occupant the right of taxing, administering and otherwise treating the occupied land as a part of his dominions.

The question of how to treat conquered territory came in for sharp discussion and disputation very early in Islam. The practice of the Prophet had apparently left the matter undecided. For he had sometimes distributed the conquered land among the victorious army as booty, and at others he had not only allowed the freedom of the vanquished but even did not touch their property. The question requires closer scrutiny before recording the final settlement of the dispute in the time of the Caliph 'Umar.

So far as I have been able to ascertain, the case of the distribution of conquered lands by the Prophet among his

¹ *Muḥiṭ* by Radīy-ud-dīn-as-Sarakḥsīy, I, 599b (MS. Walīuddīn, Istanbul).

soldiers are only those of Banū-an-Naḍīr and Banū-Quraizah. Both these Jewish tribes of Madīnah had fought against the Prophet and capitulated after a siege. The Qur'ān enjoins the administering of personal laws to Jews and Christians.¹ It may be that the Prophet was paying these Jews in their own coin.² For the Bible commanded :—

When thou comest nigh unto a city to fight against it, then proclaim peace unto it. And it shall be, if it make thee answer of peace, and open unto thee, then it shall be, that all the people that is found therein shall be tributaries unto thee, and they shall serve thee. And if it will make no peace with thee, but will make war against thee, then thou shalt besiege it. And when the Lord thy God hath delivered it into thine hands, thou shalt smite every male thereof with the edge of the sword. But the women and the little ones and the cattle, and all that is in the city, even all the spoil thereof, shalt thou take unto thyself ; and thou shalt eat the spoil of thine enemies, which the Lord thy God hath given thee. (*Deut. XX, 10-14*).

In the case of the Banū-an-Naḍīr, the Prophet was content only to expel them, and allowed each person to take with him a camel-load of property.³ In the case of the Banū-Quraizah, it was the arbitrator of their own choice who awarded exactly what Deuteronomy provided.⁴ Upon hearing of the decision of the arbitrator, the Prophet made only the comment that God had predestined that from above the seven heavens.⁵

¹ Qur'ān, 5 : 44-48. *cf. supra*, part II, ch. iv. section "Persons", b.

² On hearing the award of the arbitrator, the Prophet is reported to have remarked : لقد حكمت فيهم بحكم الله من فوق سبعة ارفقة (*Ṭabarī*, p. 1493—*Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 54).

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 653 ; *Hist. of Ṭabarī*, p. 1451 ; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 41.

⁴ Deuteronomy, xx/5-14.

Expulsion was also imposed upon the Jews of Khaibar after they had fought and eventually surrendered ; but later the Prophet agreed to let them stay on the land and work as lessees until further orders.¹ These orders were not issued before the time of the Caliph 'Umar, who, in accordance with a will of the Prophet upon his death-bed,² transported them along with other undesirable elements from Arabia to Mesopotamia.³ The Jews of Fadak and Wādī'l-Qurā also agreed to the same conditions of lease as those of Khaibar.⁴

Regarding non-Jews, surrendering after fight, the following state-document is of interest :—

In the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful. This is a rescript of Muḥammad, the Messenger of God, in favour of Ukaidir at the time of his embracing Islam and forsaking the false gods and the idols before Commander Khālid-ibn-al-Walīd, the Sword of God, regarding Dūmatuljandal and its environs.

To us all the lands not rich in water, and not having enclosures, the uncultivable and the neglected as also the coats of arms, the armour, the solidungular animals, and the fort.

To you the walled palm-groves and the water in cultivated lands.

Your beasts will not be prevented from obtaining pasture. Fractions will not be counted in the calculation of taxes. Pastures will not be closed against you. You will observe the daily religious services and pay the zakāt-tax.

You engage God as your guarantee. In return you will be assured of *bona fides* and scrupulous observance.⁵

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 764 ; Abū-Yūsuf, الخراج , p. 29.

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 1021 ; and others. ³ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 83.

⁴ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 764 ; *Futūḥ-o Balādhuriy*, pp. 33-35.

⁵ Abū-'Uбайд, كتاب الاموال , § 508 ; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 36 ; *Balādhuriy*, p. 61.

The confiscation of all unowned land as well as the fort in favour of the State, and the maintenance of all private owners on their property were terms imposed upon vanquished people whose expulsion was not desirable.

The same seems to be the practice even regarding territories surrendering without fight. For we come across scores of *enfeoffments* in the time of the Prophet regarding lands situate in different parts of Arabia and Palestine in favour of people rendering useful services to the Muslim State, in spite of the fact that these places had peacefully been won over to Islam. In the documents concerning some such donations of lands, we come across the characteristic phrase "provided the land concerned is not owned by any Muslim citizen."¹

Soon after the time of the Prophet, when the fertile lands of 'Irāq and Syria were occupied by Muslim armies, the soldiers clamoured for the distribution among them of the booty, in which they included lands, in accordance with the Muslim law of war-booty. The matter was referred to the metropolis of Madīnah where long deliberations ensued. The decision reached was communicated to the commanders of respective armies. Abū-Yūsuf has described the proceedings at considerable length and recorded the despatches addressed to the commanders of 'Irāqi and Syrian armies.² The translation of the latter document will suffice for our purposes :

Abū-'Ubaidah wrote informing 'Umar of the defeat of the non-Muslims, of the spoil which God had given the Muslims, of the terms of peace which the peoples of the conquered countries had offered, and of the request of the Muslims to distribute among them as war-booty the

¹ Cf. *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 45 ; Abū-Dawūd, II, 32 ; etc.

² Abū-Yūsuf, pp. 13-15, 81-82.

cities and its inhabitants and lands with their trees and cultivation, adding that he had refused to do so until he had written to him and asked for his opinion.

'Umar replied : Read what you mentioned of the spoils which God has given you and the terms on which you have made peace with the people of towns and cities. I consulted therein the Companions of the Prophet, who differed among themselves. My opinion follows the Book of God, Who has said :

“ And that which God gave as spoil unto His messenger from them, ye urged not any horse or riding camel for the sake thereof, but God giveth His messenger lordship over whom He will. God is Able to do all things. That which God giveth as spoil unto His messenger from the people of townships, it is for God and His messenger and for the near kin and the orphans and the needy and the wayfarer, that it circulate not between [only] the rich among you. And whatever the messenger giveth you, take it, and whatsoever he forbiddeth, abstain from it. And keep your duty to God. Lo ! God is stern in reprisal.

“ And [this spoil] is for the poor fugitives who have been driven out from their homes and their belongings, who seek bounty from God, and help God and His messenger. They are the loyal.”¹

This refers to the early Meccan refugees. Further :

“ And for those remaining in [their] homeland and in their faith before them, who love those who flee unto them for refuge and find in their breasts no need for that which hath been given them, but prefer [the refugees] above themselves though poverty be-

¹ Qur'ān ch. 59, verses 6-8.

come their lot. And whoso is saved from his own avarice—such are they who are successful.”¹

Surely these are the Anṣār (i.e., Madīnite Helpers).
Moreover :

“ And for those who come [into the faith] after them.”² These are the sons of Adam, white and black ; and God has included them among the recipients of these spoils down to the Last Day.

So let what God has given you as spoil remain in the hands of its [original] owners, yet impose the protection-tax upon them according to their capacity, which you shall distribute among the Muslims, and which will be a source of the prosperity of the country. For they know it better, and master [its exploitation] in a pre-eminent degree. In no way can you or the Muslims who are with you make them part of the spoil and distribute them, since you have made peace with them and taken protection-tax from them in proportion to their capacity. And in fact God has explained this for us and for you, and mentioned in His Book :

“ Fight against such of those as have been given the Scripture, who believe not in God nor the Last Day, and forbid not that which God and His messenger have forbidden, and follow not the religion of truth until they pay the protection-tax (*jizyah*) according to [their] capacity being brought low.”³

As soon as you have taken protection-tax from them, you have no way and no recourse against them. Tell me, if we capture their people and distribute them, what will remain for the Muslims who will come after us ?

¹ Qur’ān, ch. 59, verse 9.

² *Ibid.*, verse 10.

³ *Ibid.*, 9 : 29.

By God ! they will not find anybody to talk to nor anything to take advantage of. On the other hand [if we do not enslave the vanquished people], they will provide subsistence for the Muslims as long as they live ; and, when we die and also they, our sons will eat out of their sons as long as they live. They are the slaves of all the followers of the religion of Islam so long as the religion of Islam triumphs.

Therefore impose upon them the protection-tax and do not enslave them, and prevent the Muslims from oppressing them and doing them harm and appropriating their belongings except in the rightful way, and execute to the full the terms of peace that you have given them.

And as for the procession of the cross in their feasts, do not prevent them therefrom outside the city, if it is without banners and standards, once a year, as they have requested you. As for the inside of the city betwixt the Muslims and their mosques, no crosses should appear.¹

From that time on there is practically no instance of practice to the contrary, although the Muslim jurists assert in theory that the choice is still left with the Muslim ruler, in case of new conquests of land, to distribute it as booty or to preserve it as State property, the income from which to be spent for the welfare of the whole community.² There is, however, no difference of opinion that whenever any terms are accepted by the Muslims, they must be fulfilled in good faith.³

(a) *Sacred Lands*.—There is one more peculiarity in the treatment of conquered land. Non-Muslims must be transported from Arabia where they cannot settle.

¹ *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, pp. 81-82.

² *Idem*, pp. 35-36.

³ *Idem*, p. 35.

(b) *Crown Lands*.—Muslim jurists and historians mention that the Caliph 'Umar treated ten kinds of Iranian lands as crown lands, *viz.*, lands belonging to the ex-ruler or his household, lands of those who fell in battle and so became ownerless, lands of those who fled from the country and did not return, lands connected with postal stations, forests and the like.¹

(c) *Condominium*.—Some complication may arise regarding lands owned jointly by two States one of them remaining neutral.² Yet no belligerent will treat land as neutral if it is placed at the disposal of belligerent joint-owners for purposes of military importance, such as transit of troops, equipping and repairing of armaments and the like. Mere declaration of neutrality would be of no avail if either of the belligerents did not recognize this protestation not borne out by deeds.

(ii) *Equipment of the Army*.—In the war-zone no distinction is made of private or State property as far as war material is concerned. Men and munitions both have to bear the brunt of the war in the form of capture, destruction and damage. We have already dealt with the question of prisoners of war. The question of the distribution of booty will be treated in a subsequent section of this chapter.

2. *Private Property.*

There is no difference in the actual war-zone between

¹ *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 32; *Kharāj* of Yaḥyā-ibn-Ādam, p. 45 (ed. Brill); *Kharāj* of Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far, part 7, ch. 6 (MS. Istanbul); *Hist. of Ṭabarī*, p. 2371. Cf. also Māwardī and Balādhurī, etc. *in loco*.

² Cf. *supra* part 2, ch. 3, for various historical instances of joint rule. Reference may also be made to the prayer of Moses for the appointment of a sharer of his office (Qur'ān, 20:32. *و اشرکه فی امری*). Among contemporary Muslim states. Sudan is a condominium of Egypt and Britain, and Berar is a corregnum between Hyderabad and Britain (*i.e.*, single sovereignty and joint administration).

the property belonging to the enemy State and between the one belonging to private individuals. If a city or fort is stormed, much depends upon the terms of the surrender. In Khaibar the Prophet obtained the condition that the vanquished enemy would surrender everything except the clothes they actually wore—though later he forsook this right as a sign of generosity. Enemy is chased and subdued, but general and indiscriminate plunder of captured towns is nowhere recorded in orthodox practice.

3. *Distribution of Booty.*

The history of Muslim law on the point is interesting. When the Muslims were chased from their Meccan home, and they founded a City-State in their refuge of Madīnah, they had no laws to follow regarding booty. Generally in such cases the Prophet followed the practice of the Scripturaries. So when Ibn-Jahsh went on an expedition¹ just before the battle of Badr, he took the initiative of allotting one-fifth of the booty to the State and distributed the other four-fifths among the soldiers.² The Prophet did not accept the booty and chid the party for fighting without his permission. Three months later, the battle of Badr saw scores of enemy prisoners. The Prophet's council was divided between those who advised the decapitation of the prisoners and those who suggested release on payment of ransom. The Prophet was moved with pity and accepted the latter view.³ And regarding general booty, the Prophet used complete discretion.³ It was not until some time later that a law was fixed by the Qur'ān that the booty captured after a fight should be divided between the members of the army and the

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, I/2, p. 5; *Hist. of Ṭabarīy*, p. 1275f.

² *Hist. of Ṭabarīy*, p. 1356; *Ibn-Sa'd*, I/2, p. 14.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 1334.

State in a ratio of 4/5 and 1/5,¹ a horseman getting double² the share of an infantryman; without any distinction between the shares of the commander and the private. As for the booty acquired without fight, the whole went to the general exchequer and lay at the discretion of the head of the State.³ This kind of booty is technically called *Fai'* as distinguished from *Ghanimah* or despoliation by force.

If a place is not stormed but has surrendered peacefully, all that the Muslim government acquires under treaty is included in *Fai'*. Recurrent tribute, non-recurrent payments under treaty, ownerless property found in enemy country but not captured during the actual fight—these are other examples thereof.⁴ The people of Fadak got frightened at the fate of *Khaibar*, and begged peace of the Prophet on the same conditions as applied to the conquered people of *Khaibar*. The spoils found in *Khaibar* were treated as *Ghanimah*, but those of Fadak were considered as *Fai'*; and were disposed of by the Prophet at his discretion, for the same reason.

Both *Ghanimah* and *Fai'* may include not only cattles or movable property but also real or immovable property, and also slaves.

We have already discussed Muslim law on the question of lands and prisoners of war. If a slave is taken captive and is not repatriated on ransom or exchange basis or even gratis, then he is disposed of in the ordinary way. In order to overcome the difficulties of fraction, slaves are usually sold in auction, and the proceeds distributed among the

¹ Qur'ān, 8 : 41.

² In fact the practice of the Prophet is reported (Cf. *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 11) to have varied between a double and treble share for horsemen. The divergence in the practice may have been due to the importance of cavalry in individual battles in plains as against mountainous terrains.

³ *Kāsānīy*, VII, 116.

⁴ *Ibid.*

capturing army and the Muslim state in the ordinary proportion of four to one.

Booty is to be distributed in the Islamic territory, which includes the newly conquered place if it is formally annexed to the Muslim territory even during the course of the war. Muslim jurists describe Badr as simply a place where victory was won over the enemy, but the place was not annexed.¹ On the other hand, they say that Khaibar and the country of Banū-al-Muṣṭaliq were annexed as soon as these places were conquered by the Prophet.² That is why the booty of Badr and Ḥunain and other places not till then annexed to the Islamic territory, was not distributed in those places; and it was distributed on the spot in case of Khaibar, etc.

As said, four-fifths of the booty are allotted as the prize of the capturing army. There is no distinction between a volunteer and a regular paid soldier, or between a private and an officer, even the commander-in-chief—all receive the same share.³ Yet infantrymen get half—and according to some only a third—of the share of the cavalry.⁴ The followers of the army, however, who do not fight usually, such as contractors, traders and the like—do not share the booty unless they fight.⁵ There is no distinction, however, between those who actually fought and those who were not required to fight, although they could have fought had it been found necessary, such as those who occupy strategic positions, guards, etc. In the battle of Badr, the Prophet

¹ Kāsānīy *Badā'*, VII, 121.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Aṣl of Shaibānīy*, Vol. IV, ch. *القسمة*, and also ch. *Zakāt*, *ما يوضع فيه الخمس والعشر* و لمن تجب p. 238; *Hist. of Ṭabarīy*, p. 1362, quoting a precedent of the time of the Prophet.

⁴ Ibn-Ruṣḥd, *بدایة المجتهد*, I, 318-19; Abū-Yūsuf, pp. 10-11. cf. also *supra*, first paragraph of his this section, and note thereof.

⁵ Ibn-Ruṣḥd, *op. cit.*, I, 316-17.

allowed eight persons to share in the booty in spite of their absence from war-zone. They were employed by the commander for special duties, such as scouting, etc.¹ Women, slaves, minors, non-Muslims, though given a gift (رضخ) for their meritorious work, cannot have equal shares along with Muslim grown-up soldiers. An exception is, however, made regarding non-Muslim soldiers when they form in themselves a formidable force (لهم منعة), or without whom the rest of the Muslim army would not be strong enough; then they also share equally with the Muslim soldiers.²

Apart from the regular four-fifths of the booty, the soldiers get two more kinds of rewards or prize for their exertion, viz., *tanfil* and *salab*, which we shall now deal.

(i) By *tanfil* in Muslim law, we understand a prize-gift given to a soldier or soldiers for doing certain acts generally demanding greater risk of life. This is to be given out of the share of the State.³

There are many Traditions of the Prophet reporting his rewarding the soldiery with a fourth part of the State-share for captures during the forward march, and with a third of the State-share during the return journey.⁴ The reason, as I was assured by a modern military officer, was because a return journey or retreat without complete conquest is always much more precarious than a forward march and a penetration.

(ii) By *salab* is meant the spoil taken by a victorious combatant from the slain. According to the Ḥanafite school of thought, this customary rule operates only upon previous declaration on the part of the commander.⁵

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, I/2, p. 6.

² *Sarakhsīy*, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 309.

³ *Kāsānīy*, VII, 114-15.

⁴ *Ibn-Rushd*, *op. cit.*, I, 320; *Sarakhsīy*, المجسوط, X, 28,

⁵ *Sarakhsīy*, I, المجسوط, X, 47.

DISTRIBUTION OF BOOTY

The whole of the *salab* goes to the victor : no fifth is shared by the State, except according to the Mālikite school. There is, however, one instance in which a fifth of the *salab* was acquired for the State by the Caliph 'Umar. It is said that al-Barā'-ibn-Mālik killed a Persian satrap in a hand-to-hand fight, and a fifth of his spoil was worth thirty thousand drachmas ; and the Caliph is recorded to have said : " Though usually we did not take a fifth from *salab*, this is worth too big a sum. "—And this was the first time when a *salab* was shared by the State.¹ This shows that the reward of the *salab* is but a grace of the State.

Ibn-Jum'āh gives in detail the circumstances in which a person may rightfully claim the property of the persons whom he has slain. He says : ²

(a) At the risk of life, if fired from a castle or from the backward rows, no right to the *salab* will be maintained.

(b) To kill in combat, not when the enemy is retreating with the defeated army.

(c) To slay in resistance, not for example when the enemy has laid down his arms or is taken prisoner.

(d) To kill the enemy or at least make him harmless by severing both hands and feet, or a hand and foot of the same side, or make him blind.

(e) Some hold that those who do not share in full, such as the slaves, also do not get the *salab*.

The *salab* includes not only the arms and wearing apparel but the horse, etc.

Ṣafīy.—We have seen above,³ that in pre-Islamic Arabia,

¹ Ibn-Rushd, *op. cit.*, I, 321 ; Ṭabarīy, اختلاف الفقهاء , fol. 52b (MS Istanbul) ; ad-Dabūsīy, الاسرار , fol. 139, ch. Siyar (MS. Istanbul) ; Qudāmah-ibn-Ja'far, كتاب الحراج . Part VII, ch. 19."

² تحرير الاحكام لجبرالدين ابن جماعة , fol. 46b-47b, ch. xiv. (MS. Istanbul).

³ *Supra*, part I, ch. ix. pre-Islamic Arabia.

the commanders of the razzias used to have the right over a fourth of the booty, over the indivisible fractions, over things captured before the defeat of the enemy and general plunder, and over choice things—such as a sword, a girl, a horse, etc.—which he could select for himself before dividing the booty among the captors. Of these, as we have just seen, the fourth part was reduced by the Prophet to only a fifth, and that also went to the whole of the people, not to the private coffers of the commander or the head of the State. The choice, or *ṣafīy* as it is called, was exercised by the Prophet,¹ and it is now considered by the generality of jurists to have been a prerogative of the Prophet himself, except Abū-Thawr, who maintained that the prerogative was inherited by the successors of the Prophet in political office.² The rest of the pagan customs were abolished by Islam.

4. *Postliminium or Return of Things and Persons captured by the Enemy.*

Muslim law recognizes that if the enemy capture a thing from the Muslims, he becomes the rightful owner of it.³ So much so that he may sell it to Muslims.⁴ And if the owner of such a property is given quarter, no case may be brought against him in the Muslim Court regarding such property as he may possess at the time which originally belonged to Muslims.⁵—In short, same rights are recognized by Muslim law in this respect for the enemy as are possessed by Muslims, and the Muslim jurists admit that "in the sufferings of this world, Muslims and non-Muslims are equal."⁶

¹ Ibn-Rushd, *op. cit.* I, 316; Abū-Yūsuf, الخراج, p. 13.

² Ibn-Rushd, *op. cit.*, I, 316.

³ Sarakhsīy, المبسوط, X, 54.

⁴ *Idem*, p. 61.

⁵ *Idem*, المبسوط, X, 52, 61.

⁶ Dabūsīy, الأسرار, fol. 147b, ch. أصابة الكفار.

If a member of the Muslim army is taken prisoner by the enemy, no matter whether he is Muslim or non-Muslim, and enslaved, he recovers his freedom as soon as he is out of enemy jurisdiction.¹ The same is true of enemy persons taken prisoner by the Muslim army: if they escape and reach a place of security, they regain their freedom.²

Regarding the postliminium it is to be noted that if anything possessed by Muslims was captured by the enemy and was again taken back by the Muslim army, it had to be handed over to the ex-owner upon production of evidence, before the distribution of the booty.³ For it was the duty of the State to take care of the interest of its subjects. If it was distributed before the ownership was proved, then the ex-owner had only the right to acquire it from the new owner upon payment of its value, that is, he had the prior right of purchase.

¹ Sarakhsīy, المبعسوط , X, 93.

² *Ibid.*

³ Sarakhsīy, المبعسوط , X, 54; for a case of the horse and slave of Ibn-'Umar; cf. Shaibānīy, *Aṣl*, ch. أبواب السير في أرض الحرب (MS. Aya Sofia).

CHAPTER XXII

Women in the Muslim Army

AS early as the time of the Prophet, women took part in battles as nurses,¹ transporters of the wounded and the dead,² cooks,³ water-carriers,⁴ general servants,⁵ and in some emergent cases even as actual fighters.⁶ In the battle of Qādisiyyah (in the year 14 H.) women dug graves for the dead.⁷ In the time of Sarakh̲s̲īy (d. 483 H.), women were employed in camps even as store-guards.⁸

Although later jurists insist that such female volunteers should be of advanced age,⁹ we come across cases of youthful and even unmarried girls in the expeditions of the Prophet (cf. *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 768). 'Ā'ishah, the wife of the Prophet, was very young when she was present at the battle of 'Uḥud where she and several other lady volunteers

¹ Sarakh̲s̲īy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 206; Bukhārīy, 56: 67; *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 688; 'Umar-ibn-Muḥammad, نصاب الاحتساب, ch. احتساب على النساء, fol. 11a, b. (MS. Istanbul); Sarakh̲s̲īy, الوجيز, fol. 150a (MS. Fātiḥ, Istanbul).

² Bukhārīy, 56: 67; Sarakh̲s̲īy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 206.

³ Sarakh̲s̲īy, المبسوط, X, 70.

⁴ Bukhārīy, 56: 68, 64: 22.

⁵ *Ibn Hishām*, p. 768, during the expedition of Khaibar.

⁶ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 573; Burhānuddīn-al-Marghīnānīy, المعبط, III, ch. من يجوز له الخروج الى الجهاد من غير كراهية (MS. Yanijāmi', Istanbul); Sarakh̲s̲īy, شرح السير الكبير, III, 207.

⁷ Ṭabarīy, *Hist.*, p. 2317.

⁸ Sarakh̲s̲īy, الوجيز, fol. 50a (MS. Istanbul).

⁹ *Fatawī 'Ālamgīriyah*, in loco.

supplied water to the wounded.¹ According to Bukhārī,² the wives of the Prophet used to accompany him even after the command about veils. There is a story of a young girl in the battle of Khaibar.³ Bukhārī has several chapters on women going on sea-warfare, nursing the wounded, transporting the injured to hospitals, or otherwise rendering service to the soldiers. Shaibānī also allows young women to volunteer in military expeditions if their near relatives had no objection: "A free woman may lawfully go on military expeditions along with near relatives, in order to nurse the wounded; but she should not go without the permission of her near relatives, be she of advanced age or young."⁴ *والحرّة تجوز لها ان تاتخرج الى الغزو مع المكرم فتداوى) والمرضى و تقوم على المرضى ولا تاتخرج بغير اذن المكرم فانجزا كانت او شابة.*

The aunt of the Prophet killed with her own hands a suspect Jew when he was roaming around the wall of a small fortress where she was sent for safety.⁶ The wife and daughters of the great Khālīd-ibn-al-Walīd made a name for horsemanship. In the battle of Qādisiyah a band of lady volunteers, armed with thick sticks, rendered valuable service in actual fighting⁷ and once saved the situation by marching in ranks, giving the impression of the arrival of reinforcements.⁸ In this battle one tribe alone had seven hundred husbandless (widow or otherwise) women,⁹ from which the number of the whole female contingent may be approximated. In the battle of Jamal, 'Ā'ishah commanded the army to oppose the forces of 'Alī, the Fourth Caliph.

¹ Bukhārī, 56: 65, 67.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 768.

⁴ Bukhārī, 56: 63-67.

⁵ *Sarakhsī*, شرح السير الكبير, III, 206.

⁶ *Hist. of Tabarī*, pp. 1479-80.

⁷ *Idem* pp. 2362-63.

⁸ *Idem*, p. 2387.

⁹ *Idem*, p. 2363.

CHAPTER XXIII

Treatment of the Dead

WE have described above, that mutilation of enemy dead is strongly forbidden by Muslim law. Respect is always to be paid to the dead. So the Prophet used to stand up even if a non-Muslim's body was being borne to burial.¹ Dead bodies of the fallen enemy,² as those of Muslims, are to be buried.³ If the enemy request the handing over of the body of some dead person of their side, it may not be refused. So the Prophet did, and even went so far as to refuse to accept money offered by the enemy in lieu of the handing over of the dead body, during the battle of Khandaq.⁴ Abū-Ḥanīfah is, however, of the opinion that if money is offered in this connection by the enemy, it may be accepted. For, he argues, the property of the enemy may be captured by the Muslims, and if they offer it willingly, its acceptance cannot be forbidden.⁵ The practice of the Prophet to hand over the dead body freely seems, therefore, to represent piety rather than strict law : *taqwā* and not *fatwā*, or was based on deeper psychological objectives and propaganda purposes far more previous than merely a sum of money.

¹ Bukhārī, 23 : 50, recording sayings and doings of the Prophet.

² Abū-Ya'ā, *الاحكام السلطانية*, p. 34 (ed. Egypt). Also practice of the Prophet recorded in Badr ; cf. *Ibn-Hishām*, etc., *in loco*.

³ Ṭabarī, *Hist.* p. 2317.

⁴ *Hist.* of Ṭabarī, p. 1476 ; *Ibn-Hanbal*, I, 271.

⁵ *Shaibānī*, *Aṣl*, ch. *آخر كتاب السير*. ما زاد محمد في آخر كتاب السير.

CHAPTER XXIV

Non-Hostile Intercourse with Belligerents

DURING war occasions often arise when the belligerents are compelled or persuaded to enter into temporary non-hostile intercourse with each other. Although hostility continues *de jure*, active operations cease *de facto* on the whole or part of the front. It depends entirely upon the mutual arrangements of the opposing parties.

1. *Parley.*

The first example of such intercourse is the exchange of messages. Thus when one party desires a parley with the adversary, it makes some intelligible sign—nowadays white flags are in general use—to that effect, requesting that its message-bearer be allowed to approach the opposite commander and deliver what he is entrusted and authorised to deliver. Such emissaries are generally accompanied by interpreters.

From time immemorial the persons of message-bearers of enemy have been recognized and held inviolable. Islam sanctions this reasonable custom.¹ Enemy message-bearers may not be made victims of molestation or any other personal injury or insult, even during return journey.² Yet it is not necessary that one should always agree to receive an emissary of the enemy ; and in such a case one must notify refusal.

¹ Sarakhsīy, الميسوط , X, 92.

² Cf. *supra*, part II, *Diplomacy*.

A message-bearer is given due respect, yet if military necessities require, he may be blindfolded ; and he is bound in honour not to take advantage of his position for the purpose of obtaining military information, whether or not physical means are used to hinder him therefrom. Usually he may not be detained, but in special cases he may even be kept in honourable detention for a while until the urgencies of the situation pass.¹ He may even be taken to some other place if need be, but he must be compensated for the expenses of the extra journey ; and he must be left in or led to a safe place only.²

Anything approaching treachery on the part of the message-bearer may be dealt with severely, and this would deprive him of his personal inviolability. For, rights of message-bearers, as those of others, correlate obligations. (لايكلف الله نفسا الا وسعها لها ما كسبت وعليها ما اكتسبت).³

2. *Exchange of Prisoners.*

During war sometimes exchange of prisoners and other captures, interchange of communications, and other such things take place. As they are of mutual interest, they are tolerated and even sought after. Specially is the release of prisoners—on payment of ransom or otherwise as described in a previous chapter—of prominent importance. Nowadays special officers are appointed for this purpose. They are sometimes allowed to enter enemy territory, and sometimes a place on the border is chosen. They, as also the vessels and other vehicles of conveyance used for that effect, enjoy inviolability in going to and returning from the place where exchange is effected. Obviously such conveyance parties, cartels as they are called, are bound, on point

¹ Sarakhsiy, شرح السير الكبير, I, 320-22.

² *Aḥkām as-Salāṭin w'al-Mulūk*, ch. IV, (MS. 'Ārif-Hikmat, Madīnah).

³ Qur'ān, 2 : 286.

of losing immunity, not to take any active part in hostilities nor even to do things not connected with the purpose for which they are employed, such as transporting of foodstuff, etc., unless expressly allowed by the enemy. For a description of actual cases see Mas'ūdī's *التنبیه والاشراف*, pp. 189-90.

(3) *Permission for Travel, Transportation of Goods and Licences to Trade.*

Classical Muslim writers on law make little difference between "quarter given to a besieged and severely beaten enemy" and "permission to travel or trade in the Muslim territory." Further, the non-Muslim of a State allied or otherwise at peace and the non-Muslim of a belligerent State are often styled with the same name. And it is almost impossible to detach the rules of the one from the other except in cases when the authors choose to distinguish by qualifying adjectives. Everything they mention in the general chapter on Giving Quarter (أمان). And such foreigners are called *Musta'min*.

We have already seen, in the beginning of this part of our thesis, that it rests wholly and solely with the Muslim government whether and to what extent to permit its subjects and those under its jurisdiction to trade with a belligerent State. And Muslim jurists seem to side with those who opine that everything is permitted unless prohibited.¹ There is no reason to exclude trade from this all-embracing condition.

Enemy subjects might be, and were,² granted permission to travel within such part of the Islamic territory, for such a time, and under such conditions as described in the permit papers and passes. We have also seen that in olden times it was customary to suppose as a matter of course that if a

¹ Cf. *supra*, Part I, ch. VI, §10.

² For instance, Abū Yūsuf, *Ḳharāj*, p. 78.

merchant was granted permission, it implied permission to his servants and wife and children, without express mention. Unlike the quarter given to a beaten and besieged enemy, where nothing is granted as a right unless expressly provided for, permits to trade or travel render immune both life and property. And automatically they confer the right to sue in Muslim courts for matters and transactions connected with the permit which occur during the stay in the Muslim territory during the period prescribed in the permit. Ash-Shaibānī is emphatic that : "It is a principle that the ruler of the Muslims is bound to protect quartered foreigners as long as they are in our territory, and to do justice to them against those who do (them) wrong."¹ It is to be taken for granted that such foreigners are pre-eminently liable to be sued by the subjects of the Muslim state. The foreigners will be under Muslim penal law regarding their criminal acts,² and under civil law for their transactions. And even, when they return home, unless their country is conquered by the Muslim state, or they are taken prisoners, debts and trusts due to them are supposed to remain active ; and their heirs, if they themselves die, may claim them.³ I wonder, if they subsequently become Muslim subjects, would these rights revive ? It has also been mentioned above that foreigners cannot be sued in the Muslim court for acts or transactions entered into before their entering the Muslim territory, even though the interests of Muslim subjects are jeopardised.⁴

¹ *Sarākhsīy*, شرح السيرة الكبرى, IV, 108.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Asl* of *Shāibānī*, (MS. of Aya Sofia) Ch.

باب ما يترك المستأمن إذا دخل أرض الحرب فيده في دار الاسلام
أو يموت في دار الاسلام

⁴ الجامع الصغير of *Shāibānī*, pp. 40-41 (MS. Aya Sofia, No. 1385).

(4) *Contraband of Trade.*

State interests sometimes require prohibition of the export of certain kinds of goods to foreign countries, not only in time of war but even in time of peace. This, which is technically called *contraband of trade*, is an old thing in Islamic jurisprudence, to be traced even to the time of the Prophet.¹ The description of later jurists is obviously very elaborate. They say, for instance, that whatever is utilised for military purposes, cannot be allowed to be exported from Muslim territory ; and base their argument not only on the practice of the Prophet, but also upon Qur'ānic verses like the following :

(a) And let not your hatred of a folk who stopped your going to the inviolable Place of Worship seduce you to transgress ; but help ye one another unto righteousness and pious duty. *And help not one another unto sin and transgression.* (5 : 2)

(b) O Prophet ! strive against the disbelievers and the hypocrites ! *Be harsh with them.* (9 : 73)

One such writer says :

It is not permissible to a trader to export to an enemy country from which the belligerents may receive help in fighting against the Muslims, such as weapons, horses, non-Muslim slaves and all that is helpful in war.²

And he excludes as clearly the other things :

And there is no harm in the export of cloths, household goods,³ foodstuff, and the like. For they do not come under the meaning of (military) help.⁴

And he even records practice of the kind :

And such has been the practice from all times that they (i.e., the traders) are used to enter the enemy

¹ Cf. *infra*.

² Kāsānīy, VII, 102.

³ Household goods, the actual word used is *متاع*, which (according to *شرح المسير الكبير*, IV, 74) means things which are used while they subsist, e.g., bedding, pots, etc., unlike food.

⁴ Kāsānīy, *ibid*.

territory for commercial purposes. And nobody has cast blame or reproach upon them.¹

It seems certain that the preparation of the list of contraband things depends entirely upon a government which may even change and modify it from time to time. For this we have a decisive precedent of the time of the Prophet when Thumāmah-ibn-Uthāl, a chieftain of Yamāmah, embraced Islam and informed the Meccans : " Not a grain of Yamāmah will reach you unless and until the Messenger of God permit that."² When the Meccans were reduced to great straits on that account, they besought the Prophet to lift the ban on their foodstuff and cloths (ميرة), which was graciously conceded.³

Naturally, not only are Muslim subjects forbidden to export contraband to non-Muslim countries, but also all persons who are in Muslim territories. So Kāsānīy adds :

And so also the belligerent, who enters Muslim territory by (permission), will not be allowed to purchase weapon ; and if he has purchased, he will not be allowed to export them to the belligerent country.⁴

Although foreign subjects are allowed to bring with them whatever they like of wargear and are free to take it back with them when they return, yet they cannot change one kind of implement with another. If they change, for example, their sword for bows and arrows—as the old writers say—they cannot be allowed to take these newly acquired things with them. Even if they change sword for sword, spear for spear, and others for the same kind, it will be ascertained whether the new things are not better in quality. If they are, then they come under contraband.

¹ Kāsānīy, *ibid.*

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 997.

³ *Ibid.*, *et seq.*

⁴ Kāsānīy, VII, 102; *cf.* *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 91; *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 118.

Otherwise, when equal or worse in quality, no restriction may be imposed. And his own imports, even of the finest quality, can neither be confiscated nor forced to be exchanged with other things, for this would be a violation of pledge.¹

In this last category, however, one exception is made. So the Muslim jurists² say that a slave, professing Islam, cannot be allowed to be owned by foreigners and exported to belligerent territory, even when he was owned by the resident alien and imported by him along with him ; the master will be compelled to leave the slave professing Islam in the Islamic territory through sale or some other way. This lest he may be forced to apostatise. And history shows that these fears are not groundless.³

We may conclude this chapter with a state document of the time of the Prophet, in which trade with the enemy was expressly permitted :

In the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.

This is the writ of protection from God and Muḥammad, the Prophet and Messenger of God, in favour of John son of Rubin and the people of Ailah.

Their boats and their traders on land and sea shall have the protection of God and of Muḥammad, the Prophet. This includes also the people of Syria, of Yaman, of countries beyond the seas (اهل البحر) who are with them (*i.e.*, the people of Ailah).⁴

It is to be noted that Ailah (modern 'Aqabah, on the Red Sea) was subdued and annexed by the Prophet during the expedition of Ṭabūk, in the year 9 H., when he had set

¹ Kāsānīy, *ibid.*

² *Mabsūṭ* of Sarakhsīy, X, 89.

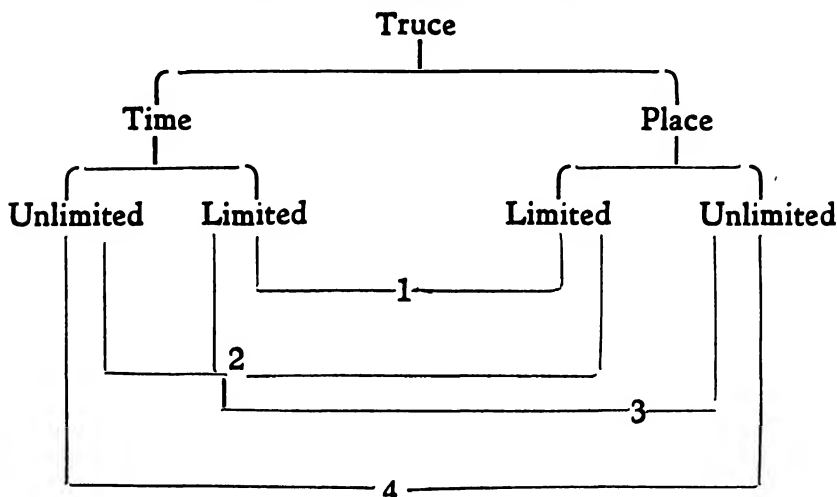
³ Cf. *supra*, part III, ch. xv/2, b, penultimate paragraph and footnote thereto.

⁴ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 902 ; Ibn-Sa'd, 2/1, p. 37 : Abū-'Uбайд, كتاب الاموال, §. 513 ; etc.

out against the Byzantines. This could not prevent him from permitting his vassal to trade with the enemy.

(5) *Truce and Armistice.*

A truce after war may be of four kinds :



The first of these is the one in which time and place of truce are fixed and limited. This generally occurs during war on a battlefield, so that the parties may carry on parleys, bury the dead, or take precaution against common danger, such as flood, etc.

The second may be for a fixed place yet unlimited in time. I have not come across a case of this kind in early Islamic history. Modern demilitarisation and neutralisation, in which Turkey has sometimes been a victim, may perhaps be referred to in this connection.

The third, general yet for a fixed period, is sometimes an armistice to conclude a treaty of peace. During such truce, all belligerent acts are forbidden. It is also possible that this general peace for a fixed time should be a complete peace and not merely an opportunity for negotiation. A most important instance of this latter kind is the treaty of

Ḥudaibiyah between the Prophet and the Meccans, which brought peace for a fixed period of ten years, at the end of which each party would be at liberty to attack without further notice. We may also cite the case of the Caliph Mu'āwiyah. He had concluded a peace for a definite period with the Byzantines, and had marched with his troops towards their border before the expiry of the term, so that he might attack immediately after the treaty of peace lapsed. But one old soldier chid him, and said that he had heard the Prophet saying :

Whoever has concluded a pact with a nation, he should neither tie a knot nor open it on (that bond) until the time expires.¹

The Caliph ordered his troops to demobilise and return home. But it may be doubted whether this act was anything but one of grace and piety.

The fourth and the last kind, unlimited in time as well as in place, is usually at the end of war, when one has vanquished or both are exhausted. We shall revert to this in the next Chapter.

Authority to make truce.—The authority to make truce for a limited period in a limited area rests in the commander-in-charge, as we deduce from practice. The other three kinds may only be concluded by the central government or its authorised officials.²

Effects of truce.—In a word, both the parties thereto are bound to observe the conditions agreed upon by each other : " And the Muslims abide by their conditions."³

¹ Abū'Ubaid, الاموال, §. 447; Tirmidhiy, Vol. 2, ch. "Treachery" (غدر).

² Cf. Ṭabariy, اختلاف الفقهاء, fol. 7, §. 14; Suhailiy, الروض الانف, II, 229.

³ Saying of the Prophet, cited by Sarakhsiy, السير الكبير, I, 185, (والمسلمون عند شروطهم).

During the operation of such a truce, the parties may do whatever they like except the carrying on of hostilities against each other, and actions which amount to infringement of treaty and breach of faith.

CHAPTER XXV

End of War

A WAR waged by the Muslim State may be brought to an end in one of the following ways :

1. Both the parties cease hostilities without any mutual agreement and without defining the length of the duration of peace. This owing either to the fact that both the parties are exhausted, or, even if one of the parties has won the battle but dares not continue or further plans for hostile activities in order to complete the subjugation of the vanquished State. The latter case generally happens when the weak party unexpectedly wins a heroic battle. Hostilities may at any time revive in such a "peace". As examples, we may refer to the battles of Badr, Uḥud and Khandaq of the time of the Prophet, when the belligerents parted without attempting to define or settle their relations.

2. The non-Muslim enemy—generally meant to be their sovereign—embraces Islam. It is not always necessary that the unification of the Muslim State and this new Muslim State should also take place. The letters of the Prophet addressed to the chiefs of Ghassān,¹ Bahrain,² and 'Umān'

¹ Qaṣṭallānīy, المواهب اللدنية , I, 296, or my *Corpus* :

يَبْقَى لَكَ مَلِكُكَ

² Ibn-Ṭūlūn, اعلام السائلين عن كتب سيد المرسلين , no. 2 (4), or my *Corpus* : يَجْعَلُ اللَّهُ لَكَ مَا تَحْتِ يَدَيْكَ .

³ Idem, no. 10 (1), Qaṣṭallānīy, I, 294, or my *Corpus*: اِنْ اَقْرَرْتُمْ بِالْاِسْلَامِ وَلَيْتَكُمْ وَاِنْ اَبَيْتُمْ اَنْ تَقْرُوا بِالْاِسْلَامِ فَانْ مَلِكَكُمْ زَائِلٌ وَ خِيْلِي تَحُلْ بِسَاحَتِكُمْ -

expressly provide for their maintenance in power on the sole condition that they embrace Islam. Muslim traditions bear testimony to the fact that a Negus of Abyssinia embraced Islam.¹ If this is true, we find that not only was his territory not unified with the Arabian State of the Prophet but also we may account partially for the famous order of the Prophet not to attack Abyssinia so long as the Abyssinians themselves did not take aggressive action.²

3. Defeat of the enemy and annexation of their territory. The conquest of Mecca, Khaibar and many other places by the Prophet are classical examples of this. In such cases negotiations and treaties are not ordinarily needed. In Mecca the Prophet concluded no treaty. In Khaibar, however, terms on which the life and property of the enemy were spared were negotiated and accepted, and probably also taken down in a document.³

4. Acceptance by the enemy of the suzerainty of the Muslim State. The submission of the city-states of Najrān, Taimā', Fadak, Ailah and others in the time of the Prophet seem to be of this kind only. In some of them no war had preceded though pressure had been brought on them which had implied military action in case of resistance.⁴

5. Formally settling the differences in a treaty of peace, while both the parties retain their independence.

The contents of the treaty are generally governed by the results of war. Usually a provisional agreement (مراوضة) is first reached settling preliminary points. Immediately afterwards military activities are prohibited from, including the right of inflicting loss of life and property on the enemy. Later other details of the final settlement are discussed and

¹ *Hist. of Ṭabarīy*, pp. 1569-70, or my *Corpus*.

² دعوا الحبشة ما ودوكم . Ibn-Ḥanbal, V. 371 ; Abū-Dāwūd, 36 : 8.

³ For details cf. my *Diplomatie Musulmane*, I, 50-51.

⁴ Idem, under names concerned, where references will also be found.

carried out. This we shall now treat.

Nature of the Treaty of Peace.

Sometimes a treaty of peace provides for future friendship and even alliance and co-operation on conditions agreed upon in treaty. More often it simply provides for cessation of hostilities and correct neighbourly relations. Weaker parties often consent to make reparations and pay tribute. In the unratified provisional treaty with the Ghaṭafān, the Prophet agreed to hand over to them a third of the produce of the oases of Madīnah provided they deserted their allies besieging Madīnah, and made a separate and immediate peace with the Muslim State.¹

Islamic polity being based on a community of co-religionists it is unthinkable to contract a treaty of perpetual alliance with non-Muslims. When the Prophet established a city-state at Madīnah immediately on his migration to that place, he consented, however, to a confederation with the Jews.² Further, he concluded pacts of mutual assistance with pagan tribes around Madīnah, especially with those in the direction of Yanbū', through which the Quraishite caravans passed *en route* to and from Syria and other northern countries.³ In all these treaties of the early days of the Muslim State, there is no time-limit. There are allusions in the Qur'ān⁴ to many other treaties of friendship with non-Muslims without any defined duration. In the treaty of Ḥudaibīyah alone we come across the mention of the term

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 676; Ṭabarīy, p.1474; Sarakhsīy, شرح السیر الكبير, IV, 4-5.

² Cf. *Constitution of the City-state of Madīnāh*, §. 25, and §. 24-47 in general; *Islamic Review*, Woking, August-November, 1941.

³ For the treaties with Ḍamrah, Ghifār, Ashja', etc., cf. *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, pp. 26-27, etc. or my *Corpus*.

⁴ Cf. *Tafsīr* of Ṭabarīy for the verses 9: 1-2.

"ten years"¹ during which the treaty would operate.

During the later years of the life of the Prophet, the Qur'ān laid down :

"O ye who believe! Take not the Jews and the Christians for friends. They are friends one to another. He among you who taketh them for friends is (one) of them. Lo! God guideth not wrong-doing folk . . . Your friends can only be God and His Messenger and those who believe, who establish worship and pay the *zakāt* (surplus-property tax), and bow down (in prayer). And whoso taketh God and His Messenger and those who believe for friend (will see that) the party of God are the victorious. O ye who believe! Choose not for friends such of those who received the Scripture before you, and of the disbelievers, as make a jest and sport of your religion. But keep your duty to God if ye are true believers." (5 : 51, 55-57).

And went even so far as to prescribe :

"O ye who believe! Choose not your fathers nor your brethren for friends if they take pleasure in disbelief rather than faith. Whoso of you taketh them for friends, such are wrong-doers." (9 : 23).

Moreover, in conformity with a Qur'ānic command (9 : 1-2), the Prophet caused a declaration or proclamation to be made that all treaties for defined periods should remain operative during the contracted time, yet all those treaties concluded with pagans for mutual help without time-limit were thereby denounced with a notice of four months.

For all these reasons, Muslim jurists conclude that treaties of friendship should not be concluded with non-Muslims for perpetuity. Generally the jurists agree that ten years should be the maximum period, in view of the treaty

¹ For text, *Ibn-Hishām*, etc., or my *Corpus* ; see also *infra*.

of Ḥudaibiyah. Suhailī,¹ however, records that "the Jurists of Ḥijāz allow peace for a definite period, even exceeding ten years provided the supreme ruler, and not any lesser authority, agrees to it."

Effects of a Treaty of Peace.

1. The subject over which hostilities had broken out is settled.

2. The rights of belligerency, i.e., killing, capturing, plundering, occupying, and other things described, before, are brought to an end.

3. Unless otherwise provided in the treaty, the *status quo* before the conclusion of the treaty will be maintained.

4. Prisoners of war are exchanged or otherwise released, for which there are generally express stipulations. Other booty is not exchanged unless expressly provided for.

5. As soon as a peace is concluded, the treaties, suspended during the war, and which require no renewal, automatically revive; and treaties dealing with behaviour during the war are suspended.

Elements of Treaty.

Basing his argument on the Qur'ānic command: "When ye contract a debt for a fixed term, record it in writing,"² and on the practice of the Prophet, Shāibānī³ and others say that a treaty must be in writing. The date of the writing of the treaty and the date on which it comes into force, as well as the duration of the treaty, must be precisely mentioned.⁴ Apart from general matters, such as the cessation of fighting,

¹ الروض الأنف, II, 229.

² Qur'ān, 2: 282.

³ Sarakhsī, شرح المسير الكبير, IV, 60-61.

⁴ Idem, pp. 62-63.

the settlement of conditions created by war, etc., and special things such as agreement regarding the matters because of which the hostilities broke out and miscellaneous things which have a connexion either with general or special things—apart from all these things—the treaties include solemn promises for the observance and execution of the treaty,¹ the signature² of the duly authorised persons, and the sanction for execution, such as hostages,³ etc. And along with the main treaty, sometimes annexes, supplements and even secret sections are also to be found.

In fact there is no limit to the subject matters of treaties.⁴ Hence no more than these essential and elementary points of a treaty could here be described.

Ratification of Treaties.

Generally treaties are negotiated and provisionally settled by representatives of States. For matters *ultra vires*, they referred even in the time of Shaibānī to the central government.⁵ History records a letter of Khālid-ibn-al-Walīd, in which he asked from Yaman for instructions from the Prophet.⁶ If the supreme chief is not available at hand, the provisional agreement is later ratified by competent authorities. It is possible that ratification may be denied and the whole treaty becomes null and void. There is an instance of this in the time of the Prophet, when the Prophet himself had concluded a pact with the proviso that it would be ratified after consulting the pillars of the State.

¹ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 62.

² Idem, p. 63 mentions seal.

³ Idem, pp. 415-60, a detailed description as to their expenses, etc.

⁴ Qalqashandīy, صبح الأعشى, XIV, 11.

⁵ Sarakhṣīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 313, etc.

⁶ Ibn-Hishām, p. 959; Hist. of Ṭabarīy, pp. 1724-25.

As a matter of fact, they rejected the terms, and the parchment was consequently effaced.¹

Interpretation of Treaties.

Classical Muslim writers on International Law and "Roots of Law" have given long details of the principles of the interpretation of the terms of treaties. I am tempted to quote a passage of Shaibānī, which shows the great concern which Muslim jurists at the zenith of their empire had for the scrupulous observance of treaties, and how they feared scandal and disrepute :

There are things which may be taken for granted by the Muslims even without express mention of them, but other nations may not imply that. Such things must be expressly mentioned, otherwise the contracting party may conclude that there is an infringement of the pact. And as we have mentioned, the document must be written in a way to bear witness against the contracting parties, and no accusation of perfidy should be possible.²

In another passage, the same author opines that if a besieged fortress surrenders on the condition that the free people will not be molested and that the ownership of the slaves will be transferred to the conquering army, and the parties differ regarding the status of certain individuals, the presumption will be that they are free people, since originally every man is free.³

Amendment of Treaties.

Treaties may be amended in part at any time by mutual

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 676; *Hist. of Ṭabarī*, p. 1474; *Sarakhsīy*,

شرح السيرة الكبير , IV, 5.

² *Sarakhsīy*, شرح السيرة الكبير , IV, 64.

³ *Idem*, p. 80.

consent of the parties concerned, instead of concluding a new pact. See also *infra*.

Denunciation of Treaties.

It is possible that changes of time render certain conditions of a treaty impracticable, and in view of the changed circumstances they should be revised. Muslim jurists say that if the Muslim ruler denounces a former treaty, he cannot do so unless he informs the other party, and he cannot act in any way contrary to the treaty until reasonable time has passed, in which it is expected that the information has reached the central government of the other party.¹

Hostages and Pledge.

In the time of classical Muslim jurists, hostages used to be exchanged or given by one party as a pledge of good faith in carrying out the conditions of the treaty.

Of the very long discussion of the subject by Shaibānī, I shall refer to one rule which has had the sanction of the practice of generations of later Caliphs. If Muslim hostages are treacherously murdered, the enemy hostages shall not suffer for the guilt which is not theirs personally. The practice of the Caliphs Mu'āwiyah and Manṣūr,² as well as a tradition of the Prophet and an oft-repeated verse of the Qur'ān,³ are cited by our authors in this connexion. The way out, according to Abū-Ḥanīfah, was to force the hostages to become non-Muslim *subjects* of the Muslim State, since they could not return before the arrival of the Muslim hostages, and their murder made this impossible,

¹ Sarakhsīy, *شرح السيرة الكبرى*, IV, p. 7.

² Idem, p. 43; Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 129; Māwardīy, p. 84; Abū-'Ubaid, *كتاب الاموال*, §. 445-46.

³ Qur'ān, لا تزر وازرة وزر اخرى. 6: 165, 17: 15, 35: 18, 39: 7. Cf. also 53: 38.

thus rendering the permanent stay of the hostages in the Islamic territory inevitable.¹

The Classical Treaty of Hudaibiyah.

The discussion of this subject may be illustrated by the most important treaty of the time of the Prophet.

Having migrated for religious persecution, and militarily harassed for six long years with varying fortunes, the Prophet went on pilgrimage to visit the House of God in his father's town and stronghold of his inveterate enemies, Mecca. At that time, he had the embittered Jews in the formidable colony of Khaibar, in the north; and the irritated, though much exhausted, Quraish of Mecca in the south. A Khaibar-Mecca coalition was imminent. At least this much was certain, that, if the Muslims marched towards Mecca, the Jews would storm the empty and undefended Madīnah; and if the Muslims attacked Khaibar, the same was the fear on the part of the Meccans,² and the Muslims at that time were not sufficiently powerful to undertake both the expeditions at once, or at least to spare sufficient force to defend the metropolis of Islam when the expedition against either Mecca or Khaibar had left the city.

Moreover the Iranians had just suffered a decisive defeat at Ninevah at the hands of the Byzantines,³ and it was just the time for Arabia to postpone its internecine feuds and take advantage of the international situation, and at least to free the Arabian provinces toiling under the Iranian yoke, e.g., Baḥrain, 'Umān and Yaman.

The Prophet wanted a free hand regarding Khaibar and Irān, and to that end was prepared to concede terms even

¹ Sarakhsīy, *المبسوط*, X, 129.

² Idem, X, 86.

³ Gerland, *Die Persische Feldzüge d. K. Heraklius*.

derogatory to his prestige. This on the one hand.

On the other hand, cut off from their victual marts of Syria,¹ 'Irāq,² Yamāmah³ and even Yaman,⁴ surrounded on all sides by Islamicised tribes,⁵ deserted by their friends,⁶ suffering actually by drought⁷ when the Prophet had won the sympathy of many of them by contributing the handsome amount of 500 gold coins towards the famine fund,⁸ by raising the ban on the grain of Yamāmah,⁹ and by going to visit the national sanctuary of the enemy during the months of the Truce of God—it was hoped in these conditions that the Quraish would the more easily be prepared to come to terms, provided their *amour propre* were not hurt and face-saving clauses were inserted.

In these circumstances, the Prophet, with a force of 1400 strong, camped at Ḥudaibiyah, in the outskirts of Mecca. And after protracted negotiations,¹⁰ the following treaty was concluded :

*Text of the Treaty*¹¹

With Thy name, O God !

This is what was agreed upon between Muḥammad,

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 547 ; *Hist. of Tabariy*, p. 1347 ; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 63.

² *Ibid.*, and *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, pp. 24-25.

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 997-98 ; استيعاب of Ibn-'Abd-ul-Barr, no. 278.

⁴ For, several Muslim attacks on Nakhlah, etc., had rendered this route also precarious.

⁵ For instance, *Khuzā'ah* in the south of Mecca, not to speak of the north and east.

⁶ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 48.

⁷ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 998 ; Cætani, *anno*. 6.

⁸ *Sarakhsīy*, الميسوط , X, 91-92 ; *idem*. شرح السير الكبير , I, 69.

⁹ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 998.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, etc., *in loco*.

¹¹ For the original text see: *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 747-48 ; *Ibn-Is'hāq* (MS. Paris) fol. 170a ; *Maghāzī* of Wāqidīy (MS. British Museum), fol. 140a ; *Ibn-Sa'd*, *Ṭabaqāt*, 1/2, pp. 70-71 ; *Hist. of Tabariy* pp. 1546-47 ; *Tafsīr* of

son of 'Abdullāh and Suhail, son of 'Amr :

They both agreed to put down fighting on the part of people for ten years, during which period the people were to enjoy peace and refrain from fighting with each other.

And whereas whoever of the companions of Muḥammad, comes to Mecca on Ḥajj or 'Umrah-pilgrimage, or in quest of the bounty of God, (i.e., commerce, cf. Qur'ān, 62 : 10), en route to Yaman or Tā'if, such shall be in security regarding his person and property. And whoever comes to Madīnah, from among the Quraish, en route to Syria or 'Irāq (variant : Egypt) seeking the bounty of God, such shall be in security regarding his person and property.

And whereas whoever comes to Muḥammad from among the Quraishites without the permission of his guardian (*mawla*), he (i.e., the Prophet) will hand him over to them ; and whoever comes to the Quraish from among those who are with Muḥammad, they will not hand him over to him.

And that between us is a tied-up breast (i.e., bound

Ṭabariy, Vol. 26, p. 61 ; *Risālāt Nabawīyah* of 'Abdal-Mun'im-Khān, no. 60' citing Ibn-Ḥanbal ; *Sīrah* of Bakrīy (MS. Aya Sofia), *in loco* ; Ibn-Kathīr, *Bidāyah*, IV, 168-69.

For extracts from the text and certain variants see : *Amwāl* of Abū-'Ubad, §. 441-44 ; Buḫārīy, 64 : 43 ; 64 : 35 (29), 53 : 6-7, 54 : 1 ; *Kharāj* of Abū-Yūsuf, p. 129 ; *Kanz al-'Ummāl* of 'Alīy-al-Muttaqīy, Vol. 5, nos. 5534, 5536, citing Ibn-Abi-Ṣhaibah ; *I'lām-as-Sā'ilīn* of Ibn-Ṭulūn, no. 26 ; for further references see Wensinck, *Miftāḥ-Kunūz-as-Sunnah*, s.v. Hudaibiyah.

For analyses and exposés, see : *Annali dell' Islam* of Caetani, anno. 6 § 34 ; Heffening, *Das islamische Fremdenrecht*, append. 2 ; Sprenger, *Das Leben und die Lehre des Muhammad*, III, 246.

Also my Arabic or French *Corpus* together with *Diplomatie Musulmane*, *in loco*, and my Hindustani article in *Siyāsāt* quarterly, Hyderabad, April, 1942.

to fulfil the terms), and that there shall be no secret help violating neutrality, and no acting unfaithfully.

And that whosoever likes to enter the league of Muḥammad and his alliance, may enter into it; and whoso likes to enter the league of the Quraish and their alliance, may enter it.

—And thereupon upsprang the tribe of Khuzā'ah and said: We are in league with Muḥammad and his alliance; and upsprang the tribe of Banū-Bakr and said: We are in league with the Quraish and their alliance.—

And that thou (Muḥammad) shalt return from us (Quraish) in this year and enter not in our midst; and that when it is the coming year, we shall go out from thee and thou shalt enter with thy companions and stay there three nights, with thee being the weapon of the rider: having swords at the side; thou shalt not enter with what is other than them (swords).

And that the animals of sacrifice (brought by thee) will be slaughtered where we found them (i.e., in Ḥudaibiyah), and thou shalt not conduct them to us (in Mecca).

[Probably Seal of Muḥammad &
Seal of Suhail]

WITNESSES:

Muslims:—Abū-Bakr, 'Umar, 'Abdar-Raḥmān-ibn-'Awf, 'Abdallāh-ibn-Suhail-ibn-'Amr, Sa'd-ibn-Abī-Waqqās, Maḥmūd-ibn-Maslamah, etc.

Meccans:—Mikraz-ibn-Hafṣ, etc.

SCRIBE AND WITNESS:—'Alīy-ibn-Abī-Ṭālib.

Two copies of the treaty were prepared. One was kept by the Prophet, and the other was handed over to Suhail, the plenipotentiary of the Quraish.¹

¹ Sarakhsīy, السیر الكبير، شرح، IV, 61; Ibn-Sa'd, 1/2, p. 71; Lammens, *La Mecque*, p. 136.

The Prophet detained the Quraishite plenipotentiary until the Muslim envoy, who was wrongfully interned in Mecca, returned safe.¹

After the agreement was reached, but before the completion of signatures, a persecuted convert, who happened to be the son of the Quraishite plenipotentiary, fled from confinement by his father, and took refuge in the Muslim camp. Upon demand, the Prophet extradited him, and conceded that the treaty should come into force immediately upon agreement without waiting for formal execution.²

The Prophet interpreted the term of extradition to embrace only men, and excluded women when some cases arose before the departure of the Prophet from Ḥudaibiyah. The Quraish reluctantly gave way.³ In case of converted women taking refuge in Muslim territory or camp, the Prophet allowed their husbands, if any, a right to what they had paid as nuptial gift—which was credited to their accounts from the general exchequer.⁴

The one-sided extradition proved expensive and inconvenient to the Meccans; and, upon their own request, the Prophet consented to amend the treaty in this respect.⁵

Cases arose to prove that extraterritorial jurisdiction of camps and armed forces was recognised by both the parties.⁶

Extension of three days' limit for the stay of the Prophet in Mecca was requested, but was not granted by the Quraish when the Prophet visited Mecca the following year.⁷

¹ *Insān* of Ḥalabīy III, 26; *Sirah* of Daḥlān, II, 46; *Sirah* of Karāmat 'Alīy, ch. Ḥudaibiyah.

² *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 748; *Hist.* of Ṭabarīy, pp. 1547-48; *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 73.

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 754.

⁴ *Idem.* pp. 754-55; *cf.* Qur'ān, 60: 10-11, and commentaries thereto.

⁵ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 752-53.

⁶ For several cases, *cf.* *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 748-55.

⁷ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 790. After three days' stay the Prophet evacuated the city, and did not utilise the opportunity to make treacherously a per-

The main object of the treaty was to get permission to visit the national sanctuary of the enemy. Incidentally, a truce for ten years was agreed upon, with immune transit or stay for religious or commercial purposes in each other's territory. As an annexe is mentioned the adherence of various tribes on either side getting the same rights and obligations as the original contracting parties.¹

As a proviso, the Prophet added, before affixing his seal, "the rights and duties are equal and reciprocal between you and us."²

The treaty is silent regarding the property of the Muslim refugees, appropriated by the Meccans,³ as the Muslims had fled to Madinah, the property of the Prophet not excluded. And tacitly the Muslims accepted the *status quo* regarding the validity of the enemy occupation.

manent occupation of the city, from which nobody could oust him, least of all the Quraish, especially when they had left the city.

¹ Prophet's Letter to Budail, cf. *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 25; Abū-'Ubaid, § 515 : (اخذت لمن هاجر منكم مثل ما اخذت لنفسى).

² *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 74 : كتب رسول الله صلعم في اسفل الكتاب : لنا عليكم مثل الذى لكم علينا

³ Cf. Qur'ān, 59 : 8 (للفقراء المهاجرين الذين اخرجوا من ديارهم واماوالهم); Bukhārīy, 64 : 84 (3) ; Sarakhsīy, *Mabsūt*, X, 52 ; *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 321-22, 339.

CHAPTER XXVI

Miscellanea

(1) Neutral and National Ambulance Service to the Sick and Wounded.

MEDICAL service is purely humanitarian. Doctors and nurses are never harmed if they did not resist ; they might be captured.

The neutral and even non-Muslim ambulance service and medical help for Muslims is mentioned by as early a jurist as Shāibānī¹ (d. 189 H.). Even Muslim relief work, rendered for non-Muslims, might be upheld on the ground of the Qur'ānic precept :² " And co-operate regarding charity and piety," (تعاونوا على البر والتقوى).

Instances abound in the life of the Prophet of arrangements for ambulance service. In the battles of Uḥud, Khandaq, and others, history has recorded details of field hospitals, nurses, and arrangement for the transport of the wounded, etc.³ The armies of the Caliph 'Umar, too, were provided with medical men.⁴

(2) Army-Court.

In the time of the Prophet, no special arrangement of judges for the expeditions is recorded, the commander himself functioning simultaneously as a judge also. We come across mention of the post of army-judge (قاضى العسكر)

¹ Sarakhsīy, السير الكبير, IV, 112-13.

² Qur'ān, 5:2.

³ Cf. *supra* ch. xxii, "Women in Muslim Army."

⁴ *Hist. of Ṭabarīy*, p. 2223 : (و بعث عمر الاطبة)

first in the time of the Caliph 'Umar.¹ They must have functioned not only to decide cases of the members of the Muslim army, but also of land and sea booty. Certain provisions of the Muslim penal code ceased to apply during an expedition, as long as the army found itself in enemy country.²

If an act was done at the command of a superior authority, it could not be considered a crime of the committer; the enemy might not try him for that act. But without knowledge and permission of the higher authority, if any wrongful acts were committed by an officer, even the officer-commanding, the damages had to be paid by his government to the sufferer. The disciplinary punishment of such an officer by his own government does not come under international law. As an instance we may mention the case of the Banū-Jadhīmah, in which blood-money was paid by the Muslim government for every life; and even dogs killed were compensated for. A considerable amount of money was added for "unknown damages that may have been done."³

The Prophet had the emancipation of slaves so much at heart that he declared that if the slaves of the enemy deserted their masters and embraced Islam and came to the Islamic territory, they would at once become free. Several cases of the time of the Prophet are also recorded as precedents.⁴

¹ *Hist. of Tabariy*, وبعث عمر الاطبة وجعل على قضاء الناس
عبدالرحمن بن ربيعة الباهلي ذا النور وجعل اليه الاقباض وقسمة
الغني وجعل دا عيتهم ورائدهم سلمان الفارسي - - والترجان
هلال الهجري والكاتب زياد بن ابي سفيان -

² *Sarakhsīy*, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 108, citing the traditions of the Prophet.

³ *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 833.

⁴ See Battles of Ṭā'if and *Kḥaibar*, in *Ibn-Hishām*, etc.

(3) *Religious Service in Time of Danger.*

The religious polity of Islam and the moral basis of Muslim international law is demonstrated by what every classical work on Muslim International Law mentions and which is also taken notice of in an unusual detail by the Qur'ān.¹ I mean, the five daily congregational religious services should not be abandoned even when actual fighting was going on. Muslim soldiers are reminded thereby so many times daily that they were fighting only in the cause of God, not at all caring for any worldly gain.²

(4) *When and Why the Muslims Should Agree to Make Peace ?*

One or two quotations of the Qur'ān will explain the point :

(a) So do not falter and cry out for peace when ye are the uppermost. And God is with you, and He will not grudge (the reward of) your actions. (47 : 35).

(b) And if they incline to peace, incline thou also (O Muḥammad) to it, and trust in God. Lo ! He is the Hearer, the Knower. (8 : 61).

It will be noticed that the victorious Muslim is required to offer peace, not the annihilation of the enemy. The object of a Muslim war is triumph of the banner of God, and no worldly gain.

(5) *Effects of Intentional and Mistaken Inter-Muslim Homicide.*

A few cases of the time of the Prophet would suffice to

¹ Qur'ān, 4 : 101-103.

² Cf. *supra*, saying of the Prophet that he alone of the warriors would go to Paradise who fought in order that the word of God may reign supreme, من في الجنة ؟ قال من قاتل لتكون كلمة الله هي العليا

illustrate Muslim law and practice on the point :

(a) It is recorded that al-Hārith-ibn-Suwaid, a hypocrite, had intentionally murdered al-Mujadhdhir-ibn-Dhiyād at Uḥud, at the time when a dismay was caused in the Muslim army by the unexpected attack of the enemy. The reason of this murder was to exploit the time and avenge an old pre-Islamic feud. The Prophet ordered, after the trial, for beheading the culprit. (Cf. Ibn-Hishām, p. 579 ; Ibn-Ḥabīb, *Muḥabbar*, p. 467)

(b) Ḥusail-ibn-Jābir was killed by Muslim soldiers during the same dismay at Uḥud, quite unintentionally, though in spite of some warning. Yet the situation was so difficult and out of the control, that such faint protestations could hardly be effective. The Prophet, on hearing the case, ordered for the blood-money to be paid from the general treasury, yet the son of the deceased person waived his rights to this money and exclaimed : " May God forgive ye ! (Cf. *Ibn-Hishām*, p. 607.)

(c) During the war of Khandaq, two Muslim detachments met each other in the night, and before the exchange of parole and ascertainment of the identity, some blood was already shed, causing some slain and others wounded. The Prophet left the matter with impunity and said : the dead of either party are entitled to martyrdom and shall go to paradise ; and the action of either party was in the path of God ; and no right to damages accrues. (Burhānuddīn al-Marghīnānīy, in his *adh-Dhakhīrah al-Burhānīyah*, on the authority of ash-Shaibānīy, MS. Istanbul, ch. *Siyar*, § 23).

(6) *Debts due to a Defeated Enemy.*

We have mentioned above (cf. ch. xi, Effects of Declaration of War, 3) that the mere outbreak of war does not wipe out the right of the now-enemy persons to debts and deposits; on the other hand it remains inviolate.

Now it may be noted that even the defeat of the enemy does not deprive them of their right to recover a debt, accrued in a lawful manner. For this we possess the very high authority of the Prophet:—

“It has been argued, moreover, on the authority of the tradition regarding the (defeated Jews of) Banū-Qainuqā'. So when the Prophet ordered their expulsion (from their homes), they said: But we have debts to recollect whose date of payment has not yet arrived. The Prophet suggested: Capitalise them at a discount. Again, when the Prophet ordered the expulsion of Banū an-Naḍīr, they said: But different people owe us debts whose date of payment has not yet arrived. The Prophet suggested: Capitalise them at a discount.

—(شرح السيرة الكبرى للسرخسي), III, 180)

These two important precedents show that monetary rights are not *ipso facto* extinguished if the parties are rendered enemy to each other; on the other hand such rights remain operative between the creditor and debtor in spite of war and of even defeat and unconditional surrender. The conversion of long-term debts into those payable immediately, at a discount naturally, was only an option which was no denying the validity of the full value of the actionable claims.

PART IV
NEUTRALITY

CHAPTER I

Introductory

THE neutrality of a State, in a war between two or more parties, is as old a thing as the co-existence of more than two independent states. Still, judicial conception of it does not seem to have developed, before modern times, to an extent calling for special chapters in law books. Muslim authors mention it incidentally in the discussion of the laws of war or peace, according to whether the Islamic State is or is not a party in the conflagration. Further the data are meagre ; and so far as I know, this is the first¹ attempt to collect and glean relevant points from the dispersed material.

¹ Cf. also my article in Z. D. M. G., 1935: "Die Neutralität im islamischen Völkerrecht."

CHAPTER II

Technical Term for Neutrality

MODERN Arabs use the word *hiyādah* (حيادة) for neutrality. Pre-Islamic and early-Islamic Arabs employed the term *i'tizāl* (اعتزال). Though this term now applies only to a particular school of Muslim philosophical and theological thought, even its scholastic sense was suggested by the neutral attitude which the Mu'tazilites adopted towards both the Sunnis and the Khārijites.

After a long discussion, Prof. Nallino of Rome has also come to the conclusion that :

1. *Nel campo teologico il nome d'al-Mu'tazilah non ebbe origine dall'idea di secessione dalla ortodossia, e non fu quindi escogitato dagli ortodossi con implicato senso di biasimo o di dispregio come una dichiarazione di eterodossia; quel nome fu scelto, od almeno accolto, dai Mu'taziliti primitivi nel significato di, neutri', neutri,' di, non parteggianti per nessuna delle due fazione contrarie (ortodossi e Hārigiti), nella grave questione politico-religiosa del modo di considerare il fāsiq.*

2. *Poichè la questione suddetta riceveva la sua importanza dalle lotte politiche e dalle guerre civili del I sec., è naturale che il nome di al-Mu'tazilah fosse desunto dal linguaggio politico del tempo; i nuovi Mu'taziliti dogmatici erano in origine i continuatori, nel campo teorico o speculativo, dei Mu'taziliti politici o pratici. (Rivista degli Studi Orientali, Roma, 1916, pp. 447 et seq.)*

Translation :

1. In theological discussions, the name Mu'tazilah did not originally mean secession from Orthodoxy, and was

not therefore excogitated by the Orthodox (Sunnīs, with the implied sense of blame or contempt as a declaration of heterodoxy. That name was chosen or at least accepted by the early Mu'tazilites in the sense of *neutrals*, "those who participated with neither the Orthodox nor the Khārijites" in the grave politico-religious question as what to consider a sinful man (*i.e.*, whether he nevertheless remained a Believer or the commission of sin rendered him an Unbeliever).

2. Since the above question received its importance on account of the political rivalry and the civil wars of the first century of Islam, it was natural that the term *Mu'tazilah* should be influenced by the political language of the time. The later dogmatic Mu'tazilites were, in the origin, mere continuators of the old political or practical "Neutrals," in the field of theory and speculation.

The Mu'tazilite philosophy occupied Muslim politics so much during the reign of Ma'mūn and his successors, that golden age of Arabic learning, that the original legal and philological sense of this term soon fell into desuetude.

In order to show that neutrality was not unknown even in pre-Islamic Arabia, a few quotations may not be out of place. They will, at the same time, give a historical background to the pre-Islamic Arabic practice, which has substantially influenced Muslim law—as was shown in Part I of this monograph. It will be noticed that at times the term *I'tizāl* or its inflected forms are used, and at others the sense has been rendered in other ways.

1. The treaty of neutrality and friendship between the Emperor Decius (d. 251 A.Ch.) and the Ghassānid prince of Syria.

Before the migration of the Ghassānids from Yaman to Syria, the Ḍuj'umites had settled in Syria, and used to tax every new immigrant, on behalf of the Byzantine emperor

according to his means. The refugee Ghassānids at first agreed to this tax, but later they refused to pay. A bloody battle ensued in which the Duj'umites were annihilated. The emperor feared the Ghassānids might incline to Persians, So he made this offer to their chief, Tha'labah :

You are a mighty and numerous people and you have annihilated this tribe, which was the mightiest and the most numerous among the Arabs. I am prepared to install you in their stead and conclude with you a treaty to the effect that if any Arabs attack you, I shall help you with 40,000 Roman combatants ; and, if any Arabs attack us, you shall help us with 20,000 combatants ; and *that you do not mingle in our affairs with the Persians.* Tha'labah accepted this, and the treaty was concluded. The emperor made Tha'labah a king, and bestowed upon him a crown (*mallaka, tauwaja*). The name of the emperor was Decius. (كتاب المسحور by Ibn-Ḥabīb, fol. 131a, MS. British Museum ; pp. 371—2, ed. Hyderabad).

2. During the famous 40 years' war of Basūs, which raged between the tribes of Bakr and Taghlib, there was frequent mention of neutrality. Al-Kalbī says :

When Kulaib, the chief of the Taghlib, was murdered by a young Bakrite, a deputation was sent to the Bakrites in order to demand the extradition of either the culprit or the chieftain or any other nobleman of the Bakrites, failing which an ultimatum of war would be given. As the murderer had escaped, the peace negotiations were frustrated. Soon a war began in which most of the branches of the tribe of Rabi'ah took part on the side of the Taghlibites against the Bakrites. But many branches of the Bakrites themselves remained neutral (*itazalat*), and took no part in the war of their kinsmen. Such were the Yashkur, the 'Ijl, the Banū-Ḥanīfah, and the Banū-Qais-ibn-Tha'labah. Particularly

the chieftain of the last named branch al-Hārith-ibn-'Abbād, who was a famous knight and poet, guarded his neutrality (*i'tizāl*), in spite of the remonstrances of his relatives. This was the prime reason why many other clans kept aloof from the war, and said : O ye people of Shaibān ! Ye have oppressed your brother (Taghlib) and killed your own cousin, the prince (*i.e.*, Kulaib). We shall never help you.

In the course of the protracted war, one of the Bakrite chiefs, who was born during the war itself, succeeded in persuading most of the tribes, who had remained neutral, to take part in the conflict. Only al-Hārith-ibn-'Abbād kept back. Yet when his own son was treacherously murdered, he too forsook his neutrality, and it is recorded that he composed the following couplet on that occasion :

I kept back from the Bakr thinking that they would
behave reasonably.

Yet the Taghlibites themselves do not want that I
remain neutral (*i'tizālī*).

On the other hand, many Taghlibite clans had also remained neutral ; but slowly all were forced by circumstances to take part in the war, which at last involved all the branches of both the Bakr and the Taghlib. (كتاب بكر وتغلب, by an anonymous author, MS. British Museum.)

3. When the tribe of Khuzā'ah emigrated from Yaman to the North for fear of the breaching of the dam of Ma'rib, their chieftain, 'Amr, sent his son to Mecca, in order to make their request of its inhabitants :

Allow us a short stay in your territory until our people, who have gone in search of colonies to 'Irāq and Syria, come back.

The Jurhumites of Mecca would not entertain the

idea, and a war ensued. One Jurhumite chief, Muḍāḍ, remained neutral (*i'tazala*), and even left Mecca along with his family, for the time being. The Khuzā'ites had the upper hand. The Ismā'ilite clans had also remained neutral (*i'tazalū*) in the war of the Jurhum and Khuzā'ah. They then came to the victorious Khuzā'ites and asked permission to live in Mecca. This was granted. On hearing this, Muḍāḍ also sent emissaries to the Khuzā'ah and requested the same proving his neutrality (*i'tizālihi*) in war. But the Khuzā'ah refused to grant the request. (كتاب الأغانى, XIII, 110).

4. Quṣa'iy, the ancestor of the Prophet, had become the supreme chief of Mecca, with the help of his clansmen of Quḍā'ah. After his death, his functions were distributed among his several sons. But rivalry divided them and each party sought foreign allies. All the local tribes joined with one or the other; only two tribes remained neutral (لم يكونوا مع واحد من الفريقين) and sided with neither of the two parties). (Ibn-Hishām, pp. 84-85)

In Ḥadīth literature also, there are things of interest for the subject. The following two citations have been taken from Bukhārīy (cf. ch. *Manāqib*, 11, and Muslim cf. ch. *Imārah*, 51, and concern the practice of the Prophet).

(a) The Prophet is reported to have said that soon civil wars would ensue among the Muslim community, and the pious believer would be the one who would sit at home during the unrest and would take part with neither faction (*i'tazala*). The narrator adds, it was owing to this ḥadīth that many a pious Muslim remained neutral during the wars between 'Alīy and Mu'āwiyah. (For instance, Sa'd-ibn-Abī-Waqqāṣ, according to Muslim, 53 : 11, Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 168, 177 ; etc.)

(b) The Prophet is said to have predicted that towards the last days of the world, a terrible fight would break out between the believers and the Rūmīs (Westerners). The Rūmīs would make this offer to one Muslim group : " Let us fight alone against those Muslims who have captured our wives and children." The Muslim group would reply : " No ! We cannot desert our brethren." This war would seal the end of the power of the Rūmīs.

CHAPTER III

Teachings of the Qur'ān on Neutrality

SO far our data have dealt with matters of more or less historical perspective. For their special importance, the relevant verses of the Qur'ān may be collected in this chapter.

(a) Hast thou not observed those who are hypocrites, (how) they tell their brethren who disbelieve from among the People of the Scripture : If ye are driven out, we surely will go out with you, and we will never obey anyone against you, and if ye are attacked we will verily help you. And God beareth witness that they verily are liars. (For) indeed if they are driven out they go not out with them, and indeed if they are attacked they help them not, and indeed if they had helped them they would have turned and fled, and then would not have been victorious, (59 : 11-12).

In these verses it is predicted that the hypocrites among the inhabitants of Madīnah would not help their friends (the Jews of Banū-an-Naḍīr, *cf. Tafsīr* of Ṭabarīy, Vol. 28, p. 29), but would remain neutral in case of fight with the Muslims.

Much more interesting are the following passages, which advise the Muslims to take care of certain tribes who had remained neutral and had not helped the enemies of Islam in their fight against the Muslims ; they also advise drastic action against those who violated their neutrality.

(b) Excepting those of the idolaters with whom ye

(Muslims) have a treaty, and who have since abated nothing of your rights *nor have supported anyone against you*. (As for these), fulfil their treaty to them till their term. Lo ! God loveth those who keep their duty (unto Him). (9 : 4. Cf. 8 : 58-60).

(c) God forbiddeth you not regarding those who warred not against you on account of religion and drove you not out from your homes, that ye should show them kindness and deal justly with them. Lo ! God loveth the just. God forbiddeth you only regarding those who warred against you on account of religion and have driven you out from your homes and helped to drive you out, that ye make friends of them. Whosoever maketh friends of them—(all) such are wrong-doers. (60 : 8-9).

The most important verse is perhaps the following, in which even the term *i'tizāl* has been used :

(d) What aileth you that ye are become two parties regarding the hypocrites, when God cast them back (to disbelief) because of what they earned ? Seek ye to guide him whom God hath sent astray ? He whom God sendeth astray, for him thou (O Muḥammad) canst not find a road. They long that ye should disbelieve, that ye may be upon a level (with them). So choose not friends from them till they forsake their homes in the path of God ; ¹ if they turn back (to enmity) then take them and kill them wherever ye find them, and choose not friend nor helper from among them, except those who seek refuge with a people between whom and you there is a covenant, or (those who) come unto you because their hearts forbid them *to make war on you or to make war on their own folk*. Had God willed, He could have given them power over you so that assuredly

¹ That is, migrate to Muslim territory.

they would have fought you. So, if they remain neutral regarding you (*i'tazalūkum*) and wage not war against you and offer you peace, God alloweth you no way against them. You will find others who desire that they should have security from you and security from their own folk. So often as they are returned to mischief they are plunged therein. If they do not remain neutral regarding you (*lam ya'tazilūkum*) nor offer you peace nor hold their hands, then take them and kill them wherever ye find them. Against such We have given you clear warrant (4 : 88-91).

CHAPTER IV

Cases and Treaties of Neutrality in the Time of the Prophet and Orthodox Caliphs.

THE Orthodox practice comes only next in importance to the Qur'ānic prescriptions. A few typical cases may be of interest.

1. *Cases.*

(a) The Jewish tribe of Banū-an-Naḍīr was allied to the tribe of Ghaṭafān, and had also secured the promise of help on the part of the neighbouring Jewish tribe of Banū-Quraizah. Believing in the aid of these formidable allies, the Banū-an-Naḍīr refused in the year 4 H., to comply with the request of the Prophet, under treaty, to contribute towards the payment of the blood-money of some of the allies common to them and the Muslims. Consequently they were besieged in their fortresses. The Banū-Quraizah, however, remained neutral (*i'tazalat*), and rendered no help to the Banū-an-Naḍīr. And similar was the attitude of the Ghaṭafān.¹

(b) Forced to quit Madīnah, the Banū-an-Naḍīr migrated to and settled in Khaibar. In view of their intrigues² with the Meccans and others, the Prophet took the initiative to nip the danger in the bud, and led an expedition against Khaibar. En route, he sent an envoy to the Ghaṭafān, who were allies of the Banū-an-Naḍīr, bidding

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 1/2, p. 41.

² *Idem*, pp. 47, 66; *Hist. of Ṭabariy*, pp. 1556, 1575-76; *Mas'ūdīy, Tanbih*, p. 250.

them not to take part in the affairs of the Muslims and the Jews. The Ghaṭafānids said that they would not desert their friends in this time of need. The tactical march of a detachment of the Muslim army against their settlements, however, persuaded them of the necessity of remaining at home and giving the Prophet a free hand in his designs against Khaibar.¹

(c) During the unrest of apostasy in some parts of Arabia, on the death of the Prophet, a Yamanite chief, Qais, sent a message to another chief, Dhū-al-Kulā', to the following effect :

The *Abnā'* (i.e., the Persians domiciled in Yaman) are but intruders in your country, and are come to you from a foreign land. If you leave them (at your side), they will dominate you also. Therefore I think it right to kill their chiefs and to expel the rest from our country.

Dhū-al-Kulā' and his partisans, however, refused this and neither co-operated with him nor helped the *Abnā'*, but remained neutral (*i'tazalat*), saying : We have no concern with all this ; do as you like.²

(d) Al-Jārūd had embraced Islam in Madīnah. When the Prophet died, Jārūd's tribe, 'Abd-al-Qais, also intended defection. He warned his people not to do so, and consequently this tribe remained loyal to Islam and did not take part in the struggle that ensued between the Muslims of Bahraïn and the rest of the tribes of Rabi'ah.³ This neutrality of theirs was of considerable importance.

2. *Treaties.*

As for treaties which provide for neutrality, or state

¹ *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 757-58 ; *Hist. of Ṭabarī*, p. 1575 *et seq.*

² *Hist. of Ṭabarī*, p. 1990.

³ *Idem*, p. 1958 *et seq.*

documents which contain reference to neutrality, they are numerous even in the early days of Islam. A few of the more important may be quoted with interest.

(a) When the Prophet migrated to Madīnah, and constituted there a city-state, he took the initiative of consolidating Muslim power by entering into alliance with non-Muslim Arab tribes living around Madīnah, especially on the caravan-route of the Meccans to and from Syria. The following treaty with a chief of the Banū-Ḍamrah dates from the month Ṣafar of the year 2 H.

He (*i.e.*, the Prophet) will not attack Banū-Ḍamrah nor will they attack him nor swell the troops of his enemies nor help his enemies in any way.¹

(b) Soon after, other families of the same tribe were rallied, and a treaty of mutual aid and neutrality in particular cases was concluded :

With the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.

This is the writ of Muḥammad, the Messenger of God, in favour of the Banū-Ḍamrah, assuring them the security of their persons and their properties ; that they may count on (his) help if anybody takes aggressive action against them, except in case of fight in the name of religion. This assurance is valid so long as a sea wets the shells. Similarly, when the Prophet requires it of them, they will help him ; and they pledge for that God and His Messenger. To help them will depend upon their loyalty and piety.²

(c) Another tribe living near the sea-coast of the Red Sea was the Banū-Ghifār. They were also rallied about the same time, and their treaty provided :

Help is assured them if anybody attacks them aggressively. If the Prophet requires their help, they will

¹ Ibn-Sa'd, 2/1, p. 3 ; *Sirah* of 'Alīy al-Qārī (MS. Istanbul), ch. Ghazawāt.

² Ibn-Sa'd 2/1, p. 27 ; Suhailiy, II, 58-59.

help him, and it is incumbent upon them to help him, except in wars waged in the name of religion. This is valid so long as a sea wets a shell.¹

(d) When the city-state of Madīnah was constituted, there were many Jewish settlements in the eastern suburbs of the Arab city. They also adhered to the confederal city-state, and agreed among other things that :

§ 45. If they (the Jews) are called upon to join a peace and adhere to it, they will do so and adhere to it. Similarly if they ask it, the same would be incumbent upon the Muslims. The wars waged in the name of religion are excepted.²

(e) It was probably in the year 5 H. that the Prophet concluded a treaty of alliance and neutrality with the tribe of Banū-'Abd-ibn-'Adīy, regarding which our historians record :

The Prophet received the deputation of the Banū-'Abd-ibn-'Adīy . . . They said : O Muḥammad ! We are the inhabitants of the Holy Circle (around Mecca) and we are the mightiest of all those who live there. We do not want to fight you. On the other hand, we are prepared to help you in your expeditions, except against the Quraish of Mecca. For we would not fight against the Quraish.³

(f) In the famous treaty of Ḥudaibiyyah also there is provision for neutrality. In fact an expression is used there which according to lexicographers has different significances. I mean the word *islāl*. It signifies the un-sheathing of a sword as well as violation of neutrality and secret help to the enemy of the other contracting party.

¹ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, pp. 26-27.

² For the complete text of the Constitution, see *Ibn-Hishām*, pp. 341-44; Aḡū-'Ubaid, *Amwāl*, §. 517; *Ibn-Kathīr*, *Bidāyah*, III, 224-26; etc.

³ *Ibn-Sa'd*, 2/1, p. 48.

That the word *islāl*, in the treaty of Ḥudaibīyah, has been used in this latter sense, is borne out by two other treaties¹ concluded in the early days of the Orthodox Caliphate, and it is conclusively proved that it was a technical term.

The relevant section of the treaty of Ḥudaibīyah is the following :

And they both agree to put down fighting on the part of people for ten years, during which period the people are to enjoy peace and refrain from (fighting) each other . . . And between us is a tied-up breast (i.e., bound to fulfil the terms), and there shall be no secret help violating neutrality, and no acting unfaithfully.²

The treaties just referred to are the following :

(g) With the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.

This is the writ of Suwaid-ibn-Muqarrin in favour of Farrukhān, the Commander of Khurāsān, concerning the enemy territories of Ṭabaristān and Jiljilān.

Thou art assured of the protection of God, exalted is He, provided that thou dost prevent the rapacities of the robbers of thy country as well as of the people adjoining thy country and that thou dost not give asylum to any rebel against us. And thou shalt pay the (Muslim) commander on the border of thy country a sum of 500,000 drachmas of the currency of thy country.

If thou dost this, it will not be lawful for us to attack thee or traverse thy country or enter it without thy permission. With permission, however, we shall have a safe passage in thy country, and the same shall be

¹ Cf. *infra*, under g and h, which immediately follow ; cf. also *لسان العرب* c. v., "سئل".

² For complete text, cf. *supra*, section XXV.

observed regarding thy passage.

Thou shalt not give asylum to any rebel against us, shalt not secretly help any enemy of ours (ولا تسلون لنا الى العدو), and thou shalt not act unfaithfully. Otherwise there will be no pact between us and thee.¹

(h) This is what Nu'aim-ibn-Muqarrin accorded the chief of the province of Rai'y :

Provided that you act in good faith, serve as guide (to us), do not act faithlessly, and do not secretly help (our enemy in violation of pledge).²

The following clause is taken from the treaty with the ruler of Nubia, concluded by a Muslim governor of Egypt of the time of the 3rd Caliph, 'Uthmān :

You, O Nubians, are assured of the Protection of God and His Messenger, Muḥammad, the Prophet. That we shall not wage war against you, nor prepare for war against you, nor attack you so long as you observe the conditions of treaty between us and you . . . But it will not be incumbent upon the Muslims to drive away any enemy who may encounter you, nor to prevent him from you, between the limits of the territory of 'Ulwah and Aswān.³

(j) Qais-ibn-Sa'd, the governor of Egypt, addressed the following letter to the Caliph 'Alīy, during the civil wars of the time :

With the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.

I have to inform the Commander of the Faithful that there are people here who want to remain neutral (*mu'tazilīn*). They have requested me not to take

¹ *Hist.* of Tabariy, p. 2659.

² *Hist.* of Tabariy, p. 2655. Cf. treaty of Jurjān, *idem*, p. 2658, for, similar provision (لم يبد منهم سل ولا غل).

³ Maqriziy, *Khiṭaṭ*, I, 200 (ed. Būlāq).

action against them but to leave them unmolested until the situation clears.¹

(k) 'Alīy replied :

Proceed towards the people thou hast mentioned in thy letter. If they obey, as other Muslims, it will be all right. Otherwise punish them.

The governor replied :

I wonder, O Commander of the Faithful, how couldst thou order me to fight against a people who are keeping aloof from thee and are giving thee a free hand to fight thy enemy. If thou wagest war against them, they shall help thy enemy against thee. So hear me, O Commander of the Faithful, and refrain from taking action against them.²

(l) Extract of the open letter of 'Alīy, addressed to the rebels and apostates of Banū-Nājiyah :

I invite you to abide by the Book of God and the practice of His Messenger, and to act righteously as God has ordained in the Book. Further : Whoever of you returns home to his people and keeps aloof and observe neutrality (*i'tazala*) *vis-à-vis* this nihilist and robber (i.e., Khirrīt, the chief of the Banū-Nājiyah), who has come forward to fight against God, His Messenger and the Muslims, and is doing mischief in the land—such will be assured of his person and property. But whoever follows him to fight against us and disobeys our authority, we shall seek help from God against him.³

(m) In the year 28 H., the Muslim armies attacked Cyprus. A peace was concluded on the condition :

¹ *Hist. of Ṭabariy*, p. 3244.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Hist. of Ṭabariy*, p. 3435 *et seq.*

That the Muslims would not attack the people of Cyprus but at the same time they would not defend them if any other power attacked them.¹

Such examples may be multiplied, but unfortunately none of them describes the rights and duties emanating from the status of neutrality, which were understood. For these we have to refer to practice. Some such things are collected in the following chapter.

1

¹ *Hist. of Ṭabariy*, p. 2826.

CHAPTER V

Laws of Neutrality according to Jurists

FROM the foregoing chapters it must have been clear that the notion and the fact of neutrality were not unknown to early Muslims. As the Muslim jurists do not treat the question in a separate chapter, but describe its provisions partly in the laws of peace and partly in the laws of war, it is not easy to glean all that is relevant to our purpose here. It must be admitted that the laws of neutrality had not so much developed in olden times as during the last fifty years, apart from the fact that the mighty onslaught of Nazi Germany has again thrown these laws of neutrality into the melting pot.¹ Still the few passages I came across in the writings of Sarakhsī, the great commentator of Shāibānī, may be reproduced here with profit. They were gleaned in a hasty perusal, and can by no means be considered as the only passages to be found in his writings or the writings of other jurists.

It is to be pointed out that these few random quotations cannot be expected to construct a whole system of laws of

¹ Not to utilise a neutral territory as a base of operation and not to prepare there a warlike expedition—such are the two basic principles of modern international law on neutrality. It is to be noted that even in the presence of the League of Nations, England required mandated 'Irāq and protected Egypt to concede to her the right of maintaining troops in and transit through their territories before she could recognise their independence, in disregard of the basic principle of neutrality. German pressure on neutrals for passage was therefore not a lead but only it followed the precedence of the neutral 'Irāq and Egypt in the World War of 1939. Cf. also the treaty of Īrān and Russia, invoked during the same war.

neutrality, namely, the rights and obligations of neutrals *vis-à-vis* States actually engaged in a war.

(a) If a State has contracted a treaty of peace with the Muslims and is attacked by a third State which made prisoners (and enslaved them), and subsequently the Muslims waged an independent war against this latter State and captured the prisoners of their friendly State, they would be slaves of the Muslims. For the third State had not violated the jurisdiction of the Muslim State in capturing them . . . If the third state secures its capture, it will become the rightful owner of the same.¹

That is to say, it will not be an infringement of neutrality to appropriate the property of a friendly state if it was duly acquired by a third state from whom it passed lawfully to the Muslims.

(b) If a Muslim citizen is staying in a foreign country which has purchased the booty captured by a third state from a fourth one, the Muslim citizen may lawfully purchase that property (in spite of the fact that his State had remained neutral in that war). For the ownership did vest in the capturing country, and foreign countries do plunder each other and acquire ownership of persons and properties. Therefore it is lawful for the Muslim resident to purchase this booty just as any other property owned by the country where he is residing.²

Similarly, if the country of residence of the Muslim citizen had captured that booty from a third state, he may purchase that booty. For the ownership was vested in it on account of securing that booty . . . If the Muslims had entered into a treaty of friendship with a non-Muslim country, which was attacked and plundered by a third state,

¹ Sarakhsīy, شرح السير الكبير, IV, 134-35.

² Sarakhsīy, المبسوط, X, 97.

the Muslim citizen residing in the former may lawfully purchase booty from the latter.¹

(c) If Muslim citizens are staying in a foreign country which is attacked by a third state, they must not fight against that third state (which is at peace with the Muslim State) . . . except when they find their own selves in danger. In this case they may fight against that third state in self-defence (not in breach of the neutrality of their own Muslim State) . . . The precedence is provided by Ja'far, the cousin of the Prophet. He had taken refuge in Abyssinia when that country was attacked by a neighbouring monarch. Ja'far was prepared to take up arms in favour of the Negus, because he was afraid that the new ruler might not offer him the same asylum.²

(d) If the subjects of a foreign country come to the Islamic territory by permission and intend to proceed to a third state at war with the Muslims, in order to join forces with them against the Muslim State, passage will be denied them. For the passport secured for them only freedom of stay and freedom of return to their own country. Beyond this, the Muslim State is right in denying them all that is harmful to the Muslims . . . No doubt if one or two of them want to proceed to the third state for commercial purposes, this may not be denied them. But the case is different when they are a formidable force.³

(e) A case of something like *benevolent neutrality*, permitting public armed forces of one state to pass through Muslim territory, seems to be mentioned in the following quotation :

If they are formidable force, and enter Muslim territory by permission in order to cross to another territory to

¹ Sarakhsīy, المحبوس , X, 97.

² Ibid., X, 97-98.

³ Idem, شرح السير الكبير , IV, 121-22.

fight their enemies, and they were attacked, while in the Muslim territory, by an enemy, the Muslim State is not obliged to come to their rescue even when it is in its power. The case is different when non-Muslim subjects of the Muslim State are attacked by foreigners, when it is the duty of the Muslim State to protect them.¹

(f) Regarding the enemy ship with neutral goods, and neutral ship with enemy goods, our authors lay down a general principle that the safety of the owner renders the property safe (حرمة الملك باعتبار حرمة المالك),²

* * * *

Here ends my humble investigation in the theory and practice of Muslim Public International Law. Although I have spent several years on the subject, yet I, more than anybody else, am conscious of many of its shortcomings; and I know that many more things are to be read before exhausting even the material existing and known to me. In the course of one's daily reading, many important works, not known before, come to one's knowledge, but, alas, seldom is it possible to consult them in our Eastern surroundings, especially when they concern old and out of print Continental works. Diffidence would have prevented me from publishing this monograph even after these dozen and more years of writing and rewriting, but at last the consolation came to my mind, that—

کار دنیا کسی تمام نکرد
فالسعی منا والاقام من الله

¹ شرح السیر الکبیر السرخسی IV, 109.

² Idem, I, 142.

APPENDIX A.

Instructions to Commanders.

1. BY THE PROPHET.

(a) *General :*

TRANSLATION :

Whenever the Prophet appointed a commander over an army or detachment, he enjoined upon him to fear God regarding himself and regarding the treatment of the Muslims who accompanied him. Then he used to say :

Fight with the name of God and in the path of God. Combat those who disbelieve in God. Fight yet do not cheat, do not break trust, do not mutilate, do not kill minors.

If thou encounterest an enemy from among the Associators (infidels), then offer them three alternatives. Whichever of these they may accept, agree to it and withhold thyself from them :

So call them to embrace Islam. If they accept, then agree to it and withhold thyself from them. Then ask them to immigrate from their territory into the territory of the *migrants*¹ (i.e., Muslim State), and inform them that if they do that they will have same rights as the migrants and same obligations as they. If they refuse to migrate, then inform them that they will be considered as bedouin (wandering) Muslims, the same Divine laws being obligatory on them as

¹ For its significance and a detailed description of the colonial policy in the time of the Prophet and the Orthodox Caliphs, cf. my article "هجرة" in the quarterly سیاست, July 1940, Hyderabad.

on other Believers, except that they will not benefit by booty and other State income unless they join forces and fight along with the Muslims.

If, however, they refuse, then call them to pay the *jizyah* (protection tax). If they accept, then agree to it and withhold thyself from them.

If they refuse, then seek help from God and combat them.

If you besiege the people of a fortress and they agree to submit on the condition that you assure them by the pledge of God and the pledge of His Prophet, then do not do that; but assure them by your own pledge and the pledge of your companions. For it is much less grave if you violate the pledge of yours and of your companions than the pledge of God and that of His Messenger.

If you besiege the people of a fortress and they agree to surrender on the award of God, then do not let them surrender on the award of God but on your own award. For you cannot be sure whether you have acted regarding them in conformity with the award of God or not.¹

(b) *To 'Abdar-Raḥmān-ibn-'Awf :*

TRANSLATION :

Then the Prophet ordered Bilāl to hand over the banner to him. He did so. Then the Prophet eulogised God and asked for His mercy upon himself, and said: O son of 'Awf! Take it. Fight ye all in the path of God and combat those who do not believe in God. Yet never commit breach of trust nor treachery nor mutilate anybody nor kill any minor or woman. This is the pact of God and the conduct of His Messenger for your guidance.²

¹ Muslim, *Ṣaḥīḥ*, V, 139-40.

² *Sirah* of Ibn-Hishām, p. 992.

(c) For instructions on other occasions, by the Prophet, cf. Tirmidhīy, 14 : 14, 19 : 2 and 48 ; Ibn-Mājah, 24 : 38 ; ad-Dārimīy, 17 : 8 ; Mālik, 21 : 11 ; Ibn-Ḥanbal, I, 300 ; III, 440, 448 bis ; IV, 240 bis ; V, 276, 352, 258 ; Zaid-ibn-ʿAliy, No. 820

2. BY ABŪ-BAKR.

(c) *To Usāmah, while proceeding against Palestine :*

TRANSLATION :

Then Abū-Bakr went and met them (in the camp), ordered them to proceed, and accompanied them on foot while Usāmah (the commander) was riding and Abū-Bakr's camel was being conducted by ʿAbd-ar-Raḥmān-ibn-ʿAwf. Usāmah told him : " O Successor of the Messenger of God, either you shall ride or I shall alight." He replied, " Neither shall you alight nor I ride. What does it matter if I walk awhile, for every step of the warrior of God merits him seven hundred pious deeds, raises him seven hundred grades and effaces for him seven hundred sins." After reaching a certain distance, he said : " If you can spare ʿUma to help me, then do that." And he did. Then Abū-Bakr said :

" People ! stop. I enjoin upon you ten commandments. Remember them : Do not embezzle, do not cheat, do not break trust, do not mutilate, do not kill a minor child or an old man of advanced age or a woman, do not hew down a date-palm nor burn it, do not cut down a fruit-tree, do not slaughter a goat or cow or camel except for food. Maybe, you will pass near people who have secluded themselves in convents ; leave them and their seclusion. And it may be that you pass near people who will bring to you dishes of different foods. If you eat one after the other, then utter

the name of God over them. And you will meet people the dressing of whose hair looks as if the devil has made a nest on the top around which they have something like turbans. So pierce them with swords.

"March, with the name of God. May God reward you by lance and plague!"¹

Another transmission of the same :

Then he stood in the army and said :

"I enjoin upon you the fear of God. Do not disobey, do not cheat, do not show cowardice, do not destroy churches, do not inundate palm-trees, do not burn cultivation, do not bleed animals, do not cut down fruit-trees, do not kill old men or boys or children or women..."²

(d) To the Commander Yazīd-ibn-Abī-Sufyān :

TRANSLATION :

When Abū-Bakr ordered Yazīd-ibn-Abī-Sufyān to proceed to Syria, Abū-Bakr accompanied him giving him instructions. Yazīd was riding and Abū-Bakr was on foot. Yazīd said :

"O Successor of the Messenger, either you shall ride or I will alight."

He replied :

"Neither shall you alight nor I ride. I reckon these steps of mine to be in the path of God.

"O Yazīd! You will soon arrive in a country where people will bring to you all kinds of food, so utter the name of God at the beginning and at the end. Further, you will come across people who have secluded themselves in con-

¹ *Hist. of Ṭabariy*, pp. 1849-50.

² *Kanzul-'Ummāl* by 'Alī-al-Muttaqīy, Vol. 2, No. 6261, on the authority of Ibn-Zanjūeh.

و امره ان يتجنب مساخط الله و محارمه و يتعدى مناهيه و مأثمه و كف من معه من الجند والماشية عن الخطى الى ظلم احد من الرعية او مساءلتهم باذية - و يحضهم على لزوم الاستقامة و سلوك نهج الطاعة و مقارعة اعداء الله في البلاد ، و التصنع لهم بافضل العدة والعقاد - و امره ان يحسن صحبة من تبعه من الجنود بتعهدهم في البعوث و ان يكثر عرضهم و يتفقد دوابهم و اسلحتهم - و اخذهم باستجادتها والنيقة فيها فان ذلك مما يزيد الله اهل السلامة تمسكا بها و اهل الدعارة تذائبا منها -

وامره ان يعرف لقواد امير المؤمنين و شيعته حقوقهم ، و ينزلهم منازلهم و يزيد في اكرامهم و رفع مقاديرهم فان ذلك مما يشكذ نياتهم و يزيد في بصائرهم -

و امره ان لا ياخذ احدا بقرف أو تهمة دون ان يكون من اهل الرب و الظنة ، و ان لا يعاقبه بشبهة دون ان تظهر له الدلائل البينة والعلامات الواضحة ، و ان لا ياخذ اهل التصون والسلامة بجرائم الدعار وذوى المفسدة -

و امره ان يبسط الامان لمن اتاه سلما ولا يجعل ذلك الى الغدر بهم سلما -

و يحذر ان يسمع عنه من استعمال الحيل والموارية ما يقابل عليه بالرواغ من واجب المطالبة -

و امره ان يتعهد ثغورة و فروجه و اطرافه و مصالحه و يحترس من اختلال يقع فيها - و يوليها من له الحنكة والتجربة بمثلها - و امره ان يكثر مطالعة اعماله بنفسه وثقات من تبعه ، و ان يتيقظ في ذلك تيقظا يزيل الريبة و يمنع الغفلة و يصد عن الغرة - و امره ان لا يمضى حدا او ينفذ حكما في قود ولا قصاص الا ما استطلع فيه راي امير المؤمنين وانتظر من الاجابة ما يكون عليه عمله و عنده و قوفه -

و امره ان يمنع الجند من التنزيل على احد من الرعية في منزله

و ان يشاركوه فيه مع اهلها الا ان يكون ذلك بالذنه و طيب نفسه
و ان يتخطوا الزروع ان يطاها احد منهم بدابته او يجعلها طريقة
في مقصده .

و لا ياخذ الاتبان من اهلها الا بالاثمان و رضا اصحابها .
و امرة ان يتعهد من في حبوسه و يعرضهم و يفتكس عن
جرارهم التي من اجلها وقع حبسهم بمشهد من قاضى البلد و
نفر من اهل الثقة والنظر - فمن كان بريثا او جرمه لا يوجب
اطالة حبسه اطلقه - و من كان من حقه ان (يكف) بالحبس
عن الناس اذاه و شره تعمد في السجن مصلحته - و من اشكل
عليه امرة انهى خبره الى امير المؤمنين ليصدر اليه من الراى
ما يكون عمله بالحسبه .

و امرة ان ينظر فيما لم يكن عهد فيه اليه شيئا مما قبله
فليجاريه و يستطلع في ذلك من الراى ما ياتي به الجواب عنه بما يمتثل به .
و امرة ان يقرأ عهده هذا على من قبله و يعلمهم حسن راى
امير المؤمنين فيهم و توخيهم صلاحهم و ايثارة الاحسان اليهم والعدل
عليهم و رفع الضيم عنهم والمجاهدة لعدوهم والمرامة دونهم .
هذا عهد امير المؤمنين اليك و امرة اياك فافهمه

(بياض بالاصل) عنده واتبع مواقع الارشاد منه و كن عند ظن امير
المؤمنين بك و تقديره فيك و ما رجاء عندك من النصيحة و تادية
الامانة و مقابلة الصنيعة - و امير المؤمنين يسئل الله توفيقك و
و ارشادك و احسان معونتك في جميع ما اسنده اليك من امر حربه
و عمله قبلك .

و كتب فلان بن فلان باسم الوزير و اسم ابيه في وقت كذا .
(كتاب الحراج و صنيعته الكتابة لابي الفرج قدامة بن جعفر الكاتب
المنزلة الخامسة من ورق ١٢ ب الى ١٣ من الخطية المكفوفة في
مكتبه كوبر و لو في استانبول تحت رقم ١٠٧٦).

(b) *To the Commander of Sea Forces.*

نسخة عهد بولاية ثغر البحر

هذا ما عهد اميرالمومنين الى فلان حين ولاة الثغر الفلانى و
بكرة و مراكبه :-

امره بتقوى الله و طاعته والحذر من عقابه واتباع مرضاته و ايثار
الحق فى جميع افعاله - فان الحق احرز فصحة و وزر و اصل مسويل و
عصر - و امرة بتعهده نفسه حتى يقسم اودها و ينغى بذكرالله
الطوى و زيغ الشيطان عنها و ان يزكى سمجيتها و يطهرها و يهذب
سيرته و يثقفها ، و يكون لمن معه من الجند و سائرالاولياء فى
الخير اماما و معلما ، وعلى سلوك افضل المذاهيج حاضا و مقوما - و امرة
ان يلين لأهل الطاعة و يشتد على ذوى المعصية ، و يعطى على كل
حال قسطها من الذصغة والمعدلة -

و امرة ان يكون الاذن عليه لمن معه من الجند مبدولا والوصول
اليه من ذوى الحاجات والظلمات سهلا يسيرا -

و امرة ان يستعمل على شرطته من يرضى عقله و عفافه و يثق
بجزالته و صرامته و شدته على اهل الريب والدعارة -

و امرة ان يديم عرض جنده حتى يعلم علمهم و يطلع على
حقيقتهم امرهم ويلزم مراكبهم ، و امرة ان يشرف على مراقبه و
ممارسه حتى يحكم امرالمرتبين فيها و يدر عليهم ارزاقهم ولا
يتاخر عنهم شى منها -

و امرة ان يتفقد امراالمراكب المنشأة حتى يحكمها و يوجد آلاتها
و يتخيرالصناع لها و يشرف على ما كان منها فى الموانى و يرفعها
من البحر الى الشاطئ فى المنشآت و هيى الرياح المانعة من الركوب فيها -
و امرة ان يكون نواشيرة و عيونه الذين يبعث بهم ليعرف
اخبار عدوهم من ذوى الصداق والذصيحة والدين والامانة والخبرة
بالبحر و موانيه و داخلاته و مغايبه حتى لا ياتوا الا بالصدق من

الخبر والصحيح من الأثر - و ان رهنهم من مراكب العدو مالا قوام لهم به انكازوا الى المواضع التى يعرفونها و يعلمون للنجاة بالانكياز اليها -

وامره ان لا يدخل فى النفاطين والنواتية والقذافين ولا فى غيرهم من ذوى الصناعات والمهن فى المراكب الا من كان طبيا ماهرا حاذقا صبوراً معالجاً - و ان يكون من يتجمله معه فى المراكب افاضل الجنود وخيار الاولياء اصدق نية و احتساباً و جرأة على العدو و ارتكاباً - و امره ان ينظر فى صناعة المراكب نظراً استكشف به آلاتها من الخشب والحديد والمشاقة والزفت وغيره حتى يتحكمها و يجميد بناء المراكب و تاليفها و قطفتها و تركيبها و يستجيد المقاذيف و يتجبرها و يتنقى الصوارى والقنوع و ينتخبها و يميز النواتية و يعتمد من له الحذق والدربة منهم والحكمة والتجربة من جميعهم حتى لا يدخل فيهم من لا يصلح دخوله ولا يتخلط بهم من يكون غيره احق بالعمل منه -

وامره ان يحترس من ان تنفذ العدو حيلة فى اجتناء الاسلحة او شئ من ادوات الحرب والمكيدة من ارض الاسلام او ان يطلق لاحد من التجار حمل شئ اليهم او اقامة الطريق الى بلدهم و من وحدة قد اقدم على هذا و ما جانسه من الناس جميعاً عاقبه عقوبة موحدة و جعله نكالا و عظة -

وامره ان يضم المراكب فى الموانى التى ترسى فيها ويولى مراعاتها من يشق بنصيحتة و شهامتة حتى لا يخرج منه مركب الا بعلمه و يشرف عليها فى كثير من الاوقات حتى يكون على هيئتها مجهزة مسنونة مقومة موضونة متعاهدة مصونة الى وقت الحاجة اليها والعمل بها و يشرف على ما فيها من النفط والبلسان والمجال و غيرها من سائرالات حتى يحتاط فى ظروفها و اوقعتها و يامن الفساد والتغيير عليها -

وامره بشدة الحذر من جواسيس العدو و عيونهم و ان يوكل لكل

مدينة من يعلم حالها ولا يطلق لاحد من البوابين والحرص ان يدخلها الا من يعلمون حاله و سبيل مدخله و صورته و مغزاه و ارادته -

هذا عهد امير المؤمنين اليك و امره اياك - فافهم واعمل بما حده و رسمه و كن عند حسن ظنه بك في جميعه و هو يسال توفيقك و ارشادك الى ما فيه الخير في جميع ما اسنده اليك واعتمد فيه عليك -

و كتب فلان بن فلان -

(كتاب الخراج لقدامة ايضا)

APPENDIX B.

Bibliographpy

1. ARABIC, URDU, PERSIAN AND TURKISH WORKS.

N.B.—The subject requires an exceedingly wide range of sources : all the works on the exegesis of the Qu'rān, on Hadīth or records of the sayings and doings of the Prophet, on Islamic history, political science, law, tactics and strategy, and many other branches of Muslim lore. We give first the more important Arabic manuscripts followed by printed works in Oriental languages, arranged in the alphabetical order :

(a) *Arabic MSS.*

احكام اهل الذمة لشمس الدين ابن القيم (المتوفى ٧٥١) الجزء الاول
في كتب خانة سعيديه في حيدرآباد و لم نجد لها اثرأ غير هــذه
النسخة الوحيدة المكتوبة سنة ٨٦٩ في ٢٨٦ ورق -

احكام السلاطين والملوك لمحمود بن احمد بن محمد المتجاوز بمكة
(بخط المؤلف) ' خطية عارف حكمت بك في المدينة رقم (١٣) تاريخ -
الادلة الرسمية في التعابى الحربية لمحمود بن منكى (تاليف
سنة ٧٠٧) خطية آيا صوفيا رقم (٢٨٣٩) -

الاسرار في الفروع لابی زيد الدبوسى (المتوفى سنة ٨٣٠) خطيات
عارف حكمت بك في المدينة و ولى الدين و داماد زاده و سليم آغا
في استانبول -

الاصل للامام محمد بن الحسن الشيباني (المتوفى سنة ١٨٩) '،

خطيات آياصوفيا و عاطف افندى فى استانبول و كتب خاذه
أصفيه فى حيدر آباد -

الاعلام عن الحروب الواقعة فى صدرالاسلام ليوסף بن ابراهيم
الاندلسى ' خطية المكتبة الملكية بمصر -

البحر المحيط و هو انتخاب كتب الامام محمد الشيبانى ' خطية
ولى الدين فى استانبول رقم (١٢٠) -

تاريخ الاسلام الكبير لشمس الدين الذهبى (المتوفى سنة ٧٥٣)
خطية المكتبة الملكية بمصر و آياصوفيا فى استانبول و ثلاث
مجلدات عندى قابلهما سبط ابن الجوزى -

تاويلات القرآن للامام الماترىدى (المتوفى ٣٣٣) خطية لاله لى
فى استانبول -

تخرج الدلالات السمعية على ما كان فى عهد رسول الله من
الحرف والصنایع والمعاملات الشرعية لابی الحسن الخزازى المولفة
سنة ٧٨٧ ' خطيه شهيد على پاشا فى استانبول رقم (١٨٥٣) و
خطية ناقصة فى الزيتونة بتونس -

تقييد العلم للخطيب البغدادى المتوفى ٢٦٣ خطية برلين -
الخراج و صنيعه الكتابة لقدامة بن جعفر (المتوفى ٣١٠ او ٣٣٧)
خطية ناقصة فى كوبرولو فى استانبول و نقل انتخاب هذه الخطية
فى باريس و ورقه واحد فى بودليان باو كسفورد و هى منسوبة
الى قلاية هناك سهوا -

الذخيرة البرهانية لبرهان الدين المرفغانى ' خطية يکى جامع فى
استانبول -

كتاب الردة للواقدى المتوفى سنة (٢٠٧) خطية بانكى پور فى
الهند و نقلها عندى -

الرسالة الوجيزة المخيرة فى أن التجارة الى أرض الحرب و بعث
المال اليها ليس مزيل البركة لمحمد بن أحمد بن محمد بن يوسف
الرهونى المتوفى ١٢٣٠ هـ (خطية رباط) -

سيرة ابن اسحاق، خطية ناقصة في القرويين بفاس، و ترجمتها
الفارسية في باريس والمتحف البريطاني بلندن -

شرح الاصول لمحمد بن احمد شمس الائمة السرخسى (المتوفى
٢٨٣ او ٢٩٥) خطية بايزيد في استانبول و كتب خانه سعيديه
في حيدرآباد -

شعب الایمان لعبد الجليل، خطية بشير آفا في استانبول والكتانية
في فاس و احمد كويا في چاليه بمليبار في الهند -

غياث الامم لامام الحرمين الجوينى (المتوفى ٣٧٨) خطيتان في
بانكى پور، والنقل المبنى عليهما جميعا عندى -

الفتاوى التاتار خانية، في سبع مجلدات كبار، خطية عندى و
ايضا في آياصوفيا و غيرها في استانبول -

فقه الملوك و مفتاح الرتاج المرصد على خزائن/شرح كتاب الخراج
لابى يوسف الفه عبدالعزيز بن محمد الرحبى خطية لالهلى (رقم ١١٦٩) -
في استانبول (بخط المؤلف المورخه سنة ١١٦٣ و نسخه اخرى
في مكتبه و هبى (افندى رقم ١٠٣٣) -

المبسوط (راجع الاصل للامام محمد الشيبانى) -
المحيط لرضى الدين السرخسى (المتوفى ٦٨١) خطية ولى الدين
في استانبول -

المحيط لبرهانى الدين المرفينانى (المتوفى ٥٩٣) خطية يكي
جامع في استانبول -

مسائل الحيطان والطرق لمحمد بن على الدامغانى (المتوفى ٣٧٨)
خطيه برلين -

المنمولا بن جبيب البغدادى المتوفى ٢٣٥) خطية ناصر حسين
بلكنو في الهند و نقلها في دائرة المعارف بكميدرآباد -

كتاب في الجهاد والمغازى لمولف مجهول خطية المكتبة الملكية
مصر فصل التاريخ رقم (٣٠٧٥) -

(b) Printed Works in Oriental Languages.

باللغة العربية

- الاحكام السلطانية لابی يعلى الفراء الحنبلى (المتوفى ٣٥٨) طبع مصر.
- الاحكام السلطانية للماوردى الشافعى (ف ٣٥٠) -
- اعلام السائلين عن كتب سيد المرسلين لشمس الدين محمد بن على بن محمد بن طولون (ف ٩٥٣) و فى آخره ضمیمة اسمها مجموعة كتب النبى لابی جعفر الديبلى السندهى المتوفى فى القرن الثالث للهجرة رواية عن عمرو بن حزم رضى الله عنه عامل رسول الله صلى الله صلى الله عليه وسلم على اليمن - طبع دمشق -
- اعلام الموقعين لابن القيم (ف ٧٥١) -
- الاسلام و اصول الحكم لعلى عبدالرازق (ببحث فى الخلافة والحكومة فى الاسلام الطبعة الثانية ١٣٣٣هـ و ترجم الى الفرساوية أيضا) -
- أقدم دستور مسجل فى العالم وثيقة سياسية مهمة للعهد النبوى تأليف طبع حيدر آباد -
- انساب الاشراف للبلاذرى (ف ٢٧٩) خطية استانبول والمطبوع منه جزآن فى القدس فى الجامعة العبرية -
- التاج للبحاظ (ف ٢٥٥) وله نسخة على الرق فى الكتانية بغاس فلم يبق شك فى انه للبحاظ -
- التبر المسبوك فى نصيحة الملوك للغزالى (ف ٥٠٥) -
- تحفة المجاهدين فى بعض اخبار البرتكاليين لزين الدين المعبرى (ف ٩٨٧) طبع فى لشبونة مع ترجمة پرتكالية و لها ترجمة هندية و انكليزية -
- التعريف بالمصطلح الشرف لابن فضل الله العمري (ف ٧٣٩) -
- تفسيرات القرآن خاصة للطبرى (ف ٣١٠) و محمد عبدة -
- تواريخ الاسلام خاصة للطبرى و ابن الاثير (ف ٦٣٠) و المسعودى (ف ٣٣٥) و اليعقوبى (ف ٢٨٣) و ابن كثير (ف ٧٧٣) و البلاذرى (ف ٢٧٧) و ابن سعد (ف ٢٣٠) -
- حجة الله البالغة لولى الله الدهلوى الهندى (ف ١١١٣) -
- حديث النبى صلى الله عليه وسلم خاصة الصحاح الستة والسنة

- الكبرى للبيهقي و كنز العمال لعلی المتقی الهندي والجامع الصغير والجامع الكبير للامام محمد الشيباني (ف ١٨٩) -
- حقائق الاخبار عن دول البحار لاسماعيل سر هنك باشا ٣ مجلدات طبع مصر -
- الخراج لابی يوسف (ف ١٨٢) وله ترجمة تركية و فرنساوية و طليانية و خلاصة المانية و ترجمة هندية تحت الطبع في الجامعة العثمانية -
- الخراج لقدامة بن جعفر (ف ٣١٠) طبع جزء من الخطبة الناقصة في استانبول فترجم الى اللغة الهندية في الجامعة العثمانية -
- الخراج ليعی بن آدم القرشي (ف ٢٠٣) طبعة ثانية في مصر اكمل من طبع اوربا -
- الخلافه والامامة العظمى لرشيد رضا طبع مصر ١٣٣١ هـ -
- الخلافة و سلطة الامة لعبد الغنى سنى بك طبع مصر ١٣٣٢ هـ -
- الرد على سيرالوزاعی للامام ابی يوسف (ف ١٨٢) نشرة مجلس احياء المعارف النعمانية في حيدر آباد -
- الرسالة القبرصية خطاب لسيجواس ملك قبرص لابن تيمية (ف ٨٢٧) -
- سراج الملوك للطرطوشي (ف ٥٢٠ او ٥٢٥) -
- السياسة الشرعية لابن تيمية (ف ٨٢٧) -
- السياسة الشرعية او نظام الدولة الاسلامية في الشئون الدستورية والخارجية و المالية لعبد الوهاب خلّاف طبع القاهرة ١٣٥٠ هـ -
- سيرة النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم خاصة لابن هشام (ف ٢١٨) والسهيلي و الحلبي و الديار بكري و القسطلاني و الزرقاني و الشامي و ابن سيد الناس و كرامت علي و موسى بن عقبة (ف ١٣١) المطبوع في برلين جزء من مغازيه -
- ابواب السير والجهاد في كتب الفقه و الفتاوى خاصة المجموع

للامام زيد بن الامام زين العابدين (ف ١٢٢) و الموطا للامام مالك (ف ١٧٩) و المبسوط للسرخسى (ف ٣٩٥) و الام للامام الشافعى (ف ٢٠٣) و المدونة لسبحون (ف ٢٣٩) و المختصر للقدرى (ف ٣٢٨) و الهداية للمرفينانى (ف ٥٩٣) و شرحه فتح القدير لابن الهمام (ف ٨٦١) و بداية المجتهد لابن رشد (ف ٥٢٠) و فتاوى قاصى خان (ف ٥٩٢) و الفتاوى الهندية العالمية و لها ترجمة هندية و بدائع الصنائع للكاسانى (ف ٥٨٧) -

شرح السير الكبير للامام محمد الشيبانى الفه السرخسى (ف ٣٨٣) مطبوع فى حيدر آباد فى ٣ مجلدات و له ترجمة تركية لعينتابى مطبوع فى استانبول قبل طبع الاصل العربى بمائة سنة تقريبا -

الشرح الدولى فى الاسلام لتحيب الارمنازى طبع دمشق ١٣٣٩ -

صبح الاعشى للقلقشندي (ف ٨٢١) -

الطرق الحكمية لابن القيم (ف ٨٥١) -

كتاب الطهارة لابن مسكويه (ف ٣٢١) -

العقد الفريد لابن عبد ربه (ف ٣٢٨) -

عيون الاخبار لابن قتيبة (ف ٢٧٠ او ٢٧٦) فى ٣ مجلدات

راجع ابواب السلطان و ابواب الحرب -

الفخرى لابن الطقطقى (الفه فى سنة ٧٠١) -

المختبر لابن حبيب البغدادى (ف ٢٣٥) طبع حيدرآباد ١٣٦١ هـ

نظام الحكومة النجمية المسمى التراتيب الادارية و العملات و الصناعات و المتاجر و الحالة العلمية التى كانت على عهد تاسيس المدنية الاسلامية فى المدينة المنورة العلمية لعبد الحى الكتانى طبع برباط فى مراکش فى مجلدين و هو شرح تخريج الدلالات للتخراعى المذكور فى المصادر الخطية -

الوثائق السياسية للعهد النبوى و الخلافة الراشدة (مع خرائط و فوتوغرافات) لمحمد جيد الله نشرة لجنة الترجمة و التأليف و النشر بمصر سنة ١٣٦٠ هـ -

باللغة الهندية

جدید قانون بین الممالک کا آغاز مؤلفہ نیسی (ترجمہ از فرانسیسی طبع جامعہ عثمانیہ)

الجهاد فی الاسلام مؤلفہ ابوالاعلیٰ مودودی، مطبوعہ دارالمصنفین، اعظم گڑھ، (ابتداء اخبار الجمعیت، دہلی میں اسی کا بڑا حصہ بالاقساط چھپتا رہا) سنہ ۱۳۳۸ھ۔

تحقیق الجہاد مؤلفہ چراغ علی، حیدر آباد سنہ ۱۹۱۳ع۔
اجنبی اقوام کو مراعات خصوصی از محمد حیدر اللہ، و (مجلہ عثمانیہ ج ۱۶ ع ۲ سنہ ۱۳۵۲ فصلی)

جاهلیت عرب کے معاشی نظام کا اثر پہلی مملکت اسلامیہ کے قیام پر، از ایضاً مطبوعہ مجموعہ مقالات، حیدر آباد اکادمی نمبر (۵)۔
دنیا کاسب سے پہلا تحریری دستور از ایضاً، مطبوعہ مجلہ طیلسانین حیدر آباد جولائی ۱۹۳۹ع۔

شہری مملکت مکہ از ایضاً، مطبوعہ معارف اعظم گڑھ جنوری و فبروری ۱۹۳۲ع۔

عدل گستری ابتداء اسلام میں از ایضاً، مطبوعہ مجلہ عثمانیہ حیدر آباد، مارچ ۱۹۳۸ع۔

عرب اور حبشہ از ایضاً در کتاب ”حبشی اور اطالیہ“ نشریہ انجمن ترقی اردو، (نیز عربی حبشی تعلقات اور نو دستیاب شدہ مکتوب نبوی بنام نجاشی، مجلہ نظامیہ حیدر آباد ربیع الانور ۱۳۶۱ھ۔ نیز مضمون اصل مکتوب نبوی بنام نجاشی کی نئی دستیابی، مجلہ عثمانیہ حیدر آباد، جلد (۱۵) (عدد ۱-۲)۔

عربوں اور بیزنطینوں کے تعلقات از ایضاً مطبوعہ، مجموعہ تحقیقات علمیہ، جامعہ عثمانیہ، حیدر آباد سالنامہ سوم۔

عهد نبوی کی سیاست خارجہ کا شہ کار (صلح حدیبیہ) از ایضاً، مجلہ سیاست، حیدر آباد، اپریل ۱۹۳۲ع۔

عہد نبوی کی سیاست خارجہ کے بعض اصول (تالیف قلبی) از
ایضاً مطبوعہ، مجلہ، نظامیہ، حیدر آباد، ربیع الانور ۱۳۵۷ھ۔

عہد نبوی کی سیاست کاری کے اصول از ایضاً، مجلہ، سیاست،
حیدر آباد، جنوری ۱۹۳۰ع۔

عہد نبوی کے میدان جنگ از ایضاً، باتصویر و نقشہ جات
طبع ثالث حیدر آباد ۱۳۶۳ھ۔

عہد نبوی کے عربی ایرانی تعلقات از ایضاً، معارف، اعظم گڑھ
جولائی ۱۹۳۲ع۔

قانون بین الممالک تازہ تر قیام (مجلہ، طیلساینین حیدر آباد
سنہ ۱۳۵۰ فصلی) از ایضاً۔

قرانی تصور مملکت از ایضاً، معارف، اعظم گڑھ دسمبر ۱۹۳۱ع۔
ہجرت (یا نوآباد کاری) از ایضاً، مجلہ، سیاست، حیدر آباد
جولائی ۱۹۳۰ع۔

قانون بین الممالک کے اصول اور نظیرین از ایضاً طبع دوم ۱۹۳۵ع۔

بالغة الفارسية

ازالة الخفاء من خلافة الخلفاء از شاه ولی الله دهلوی (ف ۱۱۱۴)
(ترجمہ اردو ہم دارد)۔

بالغة التركية

تاریخ حقوق بین الدول، مولفی ابراہیم حق، استانبول ۱۳۰۳ھ
(فصل اول- ۳: اسلامیت)۔

تورکیہ، جمہوریتی و سیاست ملیہ، و اقتصادیہ، مولفی دوکتور
لفی، استانبول ۱۳۳۰ھ۔

2 WORKS IN EUROPEAN LANGUAGES

N.B.—Just as regards in Oriental languages, so, too, here only a select list is given. I have come to know a few works only recently, and hence I was not able to utilise them, *e.g.*, those by Goadby, Redslob, Schulthess, Struppe.

- ANONYMOUS *Ueber die oberste Herschergewalt nach dem muslimischen Staatsrecht*, in : *Abhandlung d. I. Cl. d. k. Byr. Akademie der Wissenschaften*, Vol. iv, Abh. 3.
- 'ABDUR-RAḤĪM ... *Principles of Muhammadan Jurisprudence*, Calcutta, 1911, see particularly, Ch. xii. (Also Urdu and French translations).
- AMARI, M. ... *I Diplomi arabi del r. Archivio fiorentino*, Florence, 1863 ; Appendix, 1867.
- ARMANAZI, NEGĪB ... *L'Islam et le droit international*, Paris, 1929. (Also Arabic edition with ameliorations).
- ARNOLD, T. W. ... *The Caliphate*, Oxford, 1924.
- BECKER, C. H. ... *Studien zur Omajjadengeschichte*, in : *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie*, Vol. XV, 1900, pp. 1-36.
- ... *Deutschland und der heilige Krieg*, in : *Internationale Monatschrift*, 1915, Sp. 631-62, 1033-42.
- BELIN ... *Fetwa del Nakkache relatif à la condition des dhimmis*, in : *Journal Asiatique*, 1861.

- BERCHEM, VAN ... *La propriété territoriale et l'impôt foncier chez les premiers Califes*, Genève, 1886.
- BOECK, DE ... *De la Nationalité dans les pays musulmans*, Delloz Périodique, 1908, pp. 121 et seq.
- BON, GUSTAVE LE ... *La Civilisation des Arabes*, Paris, 1884 (Also Urdu trs.).
- BORDWELL ... *Law of War between Belligerents*, Chicago, 1908, see pp. 12-14.
- CAETANI, L. ... *Annali de l'Islam* (Up to the year 40 H. only), 8 vols. Milano, 1905 et seq.
- CARDAHI, CH. ... *La Conception et la pratique du droit international privé dans l'Islam*. Étude juridique et historique. In : Recueil des cours de l'Académie du droit international de la Haye, 1937 ii, article 5, 36 pages.
- CHAFIK-CHEHATA ... *Essai d'une théorie général de l'obligation en droit musulman*, le Caire, 1936,
- CHAYGAN, M. ... *Essai sur l'histoire du droit public musulman*, Paris, 1934.
- CHIRAGH 'ALI ... *A Critical Exposition of the Popular Jihad*, 1885.
- DESVERGERS, N. ... *Arabie*, Paris, 1847.
- ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA, s. v. *Caliphate*, etc.
- ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF ISLAM (Also German and French translations).
- ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF RELIGIONS & ETHICS s. v. *War*, etc.

- FAGNAN, E. ... *Le Djihad ou guerre sainte selon l'École malekite*, Alger, 1908.
- ... *Le Livre de l'impôt foncier*, trad. d'Abou-Yousof, Paris, 1921.
- ... *Les Status gouvernementaux ou règles de droit public et administratif*, trad. de Mawerdi, Alger, Jourdan, 1915.
- GAUDEFROY-DEMOMBYNES. *Le Monde musulman et byzantin jusqu'aux Croisades*, Paris, 1931.
- GIBBON ... *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, ed. of Oxford University Press cited.
- GOADBY, F. ... *International and Interreligious Private Law in Palestine*, Jerusalem, 1926.
- GOEJE, M. J. DE ... *Mémoire sur la conquête de la Syrie*, 2nd ed. Leiden, 1900.
- GOLDZIHHER, I. ... *Muhammedanische Studien*, 2 vols., Halle, 1889.
- „ ... *La Loi et le dogme dans l'Islam*, Paris.
- HAMĪDULLĀH, M. ... *Die Neutralität im islamischen Völkerrecht*, in : *Zeitschrift der deutschen morgenländischen Gesellschaft*, 1935, Berlin.
- ... *La Diplomatie musulmane à l'époque du Prophète et des Khalifes Orthodoxes*, 2 vols., Paris, 1935.
- ... *The Quranic Conception of State*, in : *Quranic World*, Hyderabad, April 1936. (Also Urdu trs.)

- ḤAMĪDULLĀH, M. ... *Place of Islam in the History of Modern International Law*, Extension lecture of the Univ. of Madras, in: *Journal of Hyderabad Academy*, Vol. 2, 1940.
- „ ... *The City-State of Mecca*, in: *Islamic Culture*, Hyderabad, July 1938. (Also Urdu trs.)
- „ ... *The First Written-Constitution of the World*, in: *Islamic Review*, Woking, 1941. (Also Urdu and Arabic trs.)
- „ ... *Diplomatic Relations of Islam with Iran in the time of the Prophet*, in: *Proceedings of the 2nd session of Idāra Ma'ārif Islāmīa*, Lahore. (Also in Urdu).
- „ ... *Islamic Notion of Conflict of Laws*, in: *Proceedings of All-India Law Conference*, 1944, Hyderabad.
- „ ... *Administration of Justice in Early Islam*, in: *Islamic Culture*, Hyderabad, April 1937. (Also enlarged Urdu version).
- „ ... *Les Champs de bataille au temps du Prophete*, extension lecture of the University of Paris, with maps and illustrations, in: *Revue des Études Islamique*, Paris, 1939. (Also enlarged Urdu version.)
- HANEBERG ... *Der muslimische Kriegerrecht*, in: *Abhandl. d. philoso.-philolog. Cl. d. Bayrisch. Akad. d. Wissenschaften*, 1869.

- HARTMANN, M. ... *Die islamisch-fränkischen Staatsverträge (Kapitulation)*, in : Zeitsch. f. Politik, Vol. ii, 1918, p. 1-64.
- HATSCHEK ... *Der Musta'min*, ein Beitrag zum internationalen Privat und Völkerrecht des islamischen Gesetzes, Berlin, 1919.
- HEFFENING, W. ... *Das islamische Fremdenderecht*, Hannover, 1925.
- „ ... *Die Entstehung d. Kapitulationen in den islamischen Staaten*, in : Schmollers Jahrbuch für Gesetzgebung, Verwaltung und Volkswirtschaft im deutschen Reiche, Verlag Dunker und Humbolt, München, 1927, pp. 99-107.
- HEYD ... *Histoire du commerce du Levant*.
- HITTI, KH. ... *History of the Arabs*.
- HITTI, KH. ... Translation of Balādhuri's *Futūḥ-ulbuldān*.
- HUART, C. ... *Le droit de guerre*, in : Revue du Monde Musulman, Paris, 1907.
- „ ... *Le Khalifat et la guerre sainte*, in : Revue de l'Histoire des Religions, 1915.
- „ ... *L'Histoire des Arabes*, Paris, 1929.
- HOLTZENDORFF ... *Handbuch des Völkerrechts*, see first of the four vols.
- JEHAY, F. VAN DEN STEEN de. *De la Situation légale des sujets Ottomans non-Musulmans*, Bruxelles, 1906.
- JUYNBOLL, TH. W. ... *Handbuch des islamischen Gesetzes*, Leiden, 1910.
- KHADDŪRI, MAJĪD ... *The Law of War and Peace in Islam*, Luzac, London, 1941.

- KREMER, VON. ... *Kulturgeschichte des Orients unter den Chalifen*, Wien, 1875. (Also English trs.).
- LANE-POOLE ... *The First Mohammedan Treaties with Christians*, in: *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy*, Vol. 24, 1904.
- LIPPMANN, K. ... *Die Konsularjuridiktion im Orient*, Leipzig, 1898.
- MACDONALD, D. B. ... *Development of Moslem Theology, Jurisprudence and Constitutional Theory*, New York, 1903.
- MAJID, S. A. ... Article on *Muslim International Law*, in: *Law Quarterly Review*, London, 1912, p. 89, et seq.
- MARTENS, F. ... *Das Konsularwesen u. die Konsularjuridiktion im Orient*, trs. by Skerst, Berlin, 1874.
- MAS LATERIE, DE ... *Traité de paix et de commerce ... concernant les relations des Chrétiens avec les Arabes de l'Afrique septentrionale, avec une introduction historique*, Paris, 1866; Supplement, 1872.
- MEZ, A. ... *Die Renaissance des Islams*, Heidelberg, 1922. (Also Engl. trs.).
- MÜLLER, A. ... *Der Islam in Morgen- und Abendland*, 2 vols., Berlin, 1885-87.
- NEGİB ARMANĀZİ ... Vide: Armanazi.
- NYS, E. ... *Études de droit international public et de droit politique*, see, pp. 46-74.
- „ ... *Le droit de la guerre et les précurseurs de Grotius*, Bruxelles, 1882.

- NYS, E. ... *The Papacy considered in relation to International Law*, English translation by Rev. P. A. Lyons, London, 1879.
- „ ... *Les Commencements de la Diplomatie*, Bruxelles, 1884.
- „ ... *Les Origines du droit international*, Bruxelles, 1894, see particularly pp. 209 *et seq.* (Urdu trs. published by Osmania University).
- „ ... *Le Droit des gens dans les rapports des Arabes et des Byzantins*, in : *Revue du droit international et législation comparée*, Bruxelles, 1896.
- OSTROROG, L. ... *The Angora Reform*, London.
- „ ... Trad. française de Māwerdi (*Traité de droit public musulman*, Paris, 1901).
- PÉIER, J. ... *Vie d'al-Hadjdaj-ibn-Yousof*, Paris, 1904.
- QUATREMÉRE ... *Les Asiles chez les Arabes* (mém. de l'Inst. royal de France, Acad. d. Insc. et belles lettres, t. 15, pt. 2, Paris 1845, pp. 307 ff.)
- RECHID, A. ... *L'Islam et le droit des gens*, in : *Recueil des cours de l'Acad. de droit internationale de la Haye*, 1937/ii, article 4, 30 pages.
- „ ... *La Condition des étrangers en Turquie*, in the same, 1933/iv.
- „ ... *Les droits minoritaires en Turquie dans le passé et le présent*, in : *Revue générale du droit international public*, 1935.

- REDSLOB, R. ... *Histoire des grands principes du droit des gens*, Paris, 1923 (cited by Rechid).
- RELAND, H. (died 1718). *Institutions du droit musulman relatives à la guerre*, tr. du latin par Solvet, 1838.
- REVUE DU MONDE MUSULMAN. Paris, 1925 : *Études sur la notion islamique de souveraineté*, (by Barthold, etc.); also "bibliographie."
- RITTER, H. ... *Die Abschaffung des Kalifats*, in : *Archiv für Politik und Geschichte*, n.s., Vol. ii, 1924, pp. 343-68.
- ROSENMÜLLER ... *Analecta arab.*, tr. of the ch. *Kitāb as-siyar* of Qudūrīy.
- SABA ... *L'Islam et la Nationalité*, Paris, 1933.
- SACHAU, E. ... *Der Kalife Abu Bekr*, in : *Sitzungsberichte der Akademie der Wissenschaften*, 1903, pp. 16-37, Berlin.
- SACHAU, E. ... *Über den zweiten Chalifen Omar*, in the same, 1902, pp. 292-323.
- SALEM, J. ... *De la compétence des tribunaux ottomans à l'égard des étrangers*, in : *Journal de Droit international*, 1893.
- SANTILLANA, D. ... *Il Concetto di califfato e di sovrainté nel diritto musulmano*, in: *Oriente Moderno*, Roma, 1924, pp. 339-50.
- *Istituzioni di diritto musulmano malichita*, Roma, 1926.
- Article in English on *Muslim Jurisprudence*, in : *Legacy of Islam*, Oxford.

- SCHAUBE, A. ... *Handelsgeschichte d. romanischen Völker d. Mittelmeergebietes bis zum Ende der Kreuzzüge*, München, 1906.
- SCHMIDT, F. F. ... *Die Occupatio im islamischen Recht*, in : *Der Islam*, Vol. I, 1910, 53 pages.
- SCHULTHESS, F. ... *Die Machtmittel des Islams*, Zürich, 1920.
- SCHWALLY, F. ... *Der heilige Krieg des Islam in religionsgeschichtlicher und staatsrechtlicher Bedeutung*, in : *Internationale Monatschrift*, 1916, Sp. 678-714.
- SNOUCK-HURGRONJE ... *Le Droit musulman*, in : *Revue d'Histoire des Religions*, Vol. 37. Also reproduced in his *Verspreide Geschriften*, Vol. 2, article 17, pp. 283-326.
- „ ... *Le Khalifat du Sultan de Constantinople*, in : *Questions Dipl. et Coloniales*, Paris, 15th July 1901 ; also in : *Versp. Geschr.* III, 207-16.
- „ ... *The Caliphate*, in : *Foreign Affairs*, III/1, 15 Sept. 1924 ; also in : *Versp. Geschr.* VI, 435-52.
- SOLVET, CH. ... *Institutions du droit mahométan sur la guerre avec les Infidèles*, trad. de l'arabe (de Qudûrîy), Paris, 1829.
- STRUPPE, C. H. ... *Urkunden zur Geschichte des Völkerrechts*, Gotha, 1912, 2 vols. (cited in *Handbuch der Islamliteratur* by Pfanmüller).

- TAFEL U. THOMAS ... *Urkunden zur älteren Handels- u. Staatsgeschichte d. Republik Venedig*, 3 vols. Wien, 1856-57.
- TOYNBEE ... *Survey of International Affairs*, volume for 1925, part I, Islamic Countries. (Also the whole series from 1920 onwards).
- „ ... *Turkey*, London, 1926 (particularly for Caliphate).
- TSCHUDI, R. ... *Das Chalifat*, in : Philosophie und Geschichte series, Nr. X, Tübingen, 1926.
- TYAN, E. ... *Histoire de l'Organisation judiciaire en pays d'Islam*, Vol. I, Paris, 1938.
- WALKER ... *History of the Law of Nations*, Vol. 1, Cambridge, see Sec. 45-66.
- WELLHAUSEN, J. ... *Ein Gemeinwesen ohne Obrigkeit*, Göttingen, 1900.
- „ ... *Gemeindeordnung von Medina*, in : Skizzen und Vorarbeiten, Vol. 4.
- „ ... *Das arabische Reich und sein Sturz*, Berlin, 1902.
- WENSINCK, A. J. ... *Mohammed en de Joden te Medina*, Leiden, 1908.
- WITTEK, P. ... *Islam u. Kalifat*, in : Archiv f. Sozialw. u. Sozialpolitik, 1925, Vol. 53, pp. 370-426.

3. HISTORY OF INTERNATIONAL LAW IN NON-MUSLIM LANDS.

(a) Assyrians and Babylonians.

- GOODSPEED ... *History of Babylonians and Assyrians*, 1902, p. 197.

- MASPERO ... *Struggle of the Nations*, p. 639 et seq.
- OLMSTEAD ... *History of Assyria*, 1923, Ch. viii.
- " ... *A Political Science Review*, 1918, pp. 63-77.
- " ... 23 *A. Hist. Review*, 1917-18, pp. 755-62.
- " ... *Records of the Past* (new series), pp. 134-77.

(b) *Medes and Persians.*

- CHRISTENSEN, A., ... *L'Iran sous les Sassanides*, Copenhagen, 1936. (Also Urdu trs.).
- HEROD. ... iii, 16 ; vii, 238 ; i, 155 ; vi, 42.
- LAURENT, ... *Études sur l'Humanité*, 1865-80, p. 477.
- TAGHI NASR ... *Essai sur l'histoire du droit persan à l'époque des Sassanides*, Paris, 1932.

(c) *Phœnicians and Carthaginians.*

- LAURENT ... *Études sur l'humanité*, I, 500, 541.
- BIBLE ... CH. *Judges*, i, 7 ; *Samuel*, ix, 2 ; 2 *Kings*, viii, 12.
- MONTESQUIEU ... *Esprit des lois*, book xxi, Ch. 2.
- GROTE ... *History of Greece*, Part 2, Ch. 18.
- POLYBIUS ... I, 72 (trans. by Schukburg, 1889).

(d) *Egyptians.*

- BREASTED ... *History of Egypt*, 1905, pp. 437-38.
- " ... *Ancient Records of Egypt*, 1906-7, Sec. 370-91 ; 588.

- MASPERO ... *Struggle of the Nations*, p. 401 et seq ; 228.
- „ ... *Life in Ancient Egypt and Assyria*, 1892, p. 189.
- PETRIE ... *History of Egypt*, p. 64 et seq.
- BUDGE ... *History of Egypt*, 1902, p. 48 et seq.
- BRUGSCH ... *Egypt under the Pharaohs*, 1881, pp. 71-76, 402.
- CYBICHOWSKI ... *Das antike Völkerrecht*, 1907, p. 10 et seq.
- BIBLE ... CH. *Exod.* I/ii, 14.
- *Records of the Past* (First Series), 27-32.

(e) *Greeks and Romans.*

- PHILLIPSON ... *International Law and Custom of Ancient Greece and Rome*, 2 vols.
See also its excellent bibliography.
- OPPENHEIM ... *International Law*, 4th ed., Vol. I.

(f) *Jews.*

- LETOURNEAU ... *La guerre dans les diverses races humaines*, 1895, Ch. 13.
- „ ... *Legacy of Israel*, Oxford University Press.
- BIBLE ... CH. *Exod.* xxxiv, 10-6 ; *Deut.* vii, 1-3, 22-26, xx, 10-20 ; 2 *Samuel*, viii, 2 : xii, 31.
- VOLZ ... *Biblische Altertümer.*
- SCHWALLY ... *Israelitische und jüdische Kriegsaltertümer*, 1919.

(g) *Chinese.*

- MARTIN ... *The Lore of Cathay*, 1901, Ch. 22-23.
- ZEITSCHRIFT FÜR
VÖLKERRECHT ... Breslau, 1908, p. 192-205.
- JOURNAL OF THE ... London, 1891, p. 7-13 : "*Chinese
ROYAL ASIATIC International Law.*"
SOCIETY.
- STEFAN LIPOWZOW ... Li-fan-Yuan's treatise on Tiberan
law, translated into Russian
through Manchurian : *Ulozhenie
kitaiskoj palaty wenjeschnich
snoschneij perewel s Mantschs-
churskago*, St. Petersburg, 1828,
2 vols.
- MÜLLER, H. ... *Über die Natur des Völkerrechts und
seine Quellen in China*, in : Zeits-
chrift für Völkerrecht und
Budessataatsrecht, Breslau, III,
1909, pp. 188-205.

(h) *Of Ancient India.*

- KAUTILIYA ... *Arthasastra*, English translation.
- BURNELL & HOPKINS *The Ordinances of Manu*, 1891.
- VISWANATHA ... *International Law in Ancient India*,
1925.
- BANDHYOPADHYAYA... *International Law in Ancient India.*
- NAG, K. ... *Les théories diplomatiques de l'Inde
ancienne et l'Arthçastra*, Paris,
1923.
- NARENDAR NATH LAW *Inter-State Relations in Ancient
India*, Part I, Calcutta Oriental
Series, 1920.

(j) Of East Indies.

- ARRIAN ... Ind. c. II.
DIODOR ... II, 36, 40.
STRABO ... XV, 484, ed. Cassaub.

(k) Universal.

- WALKER ... *A History of the Law of Nations*,
Cambridge, 1899. (Vol. I only
has appeared).
HOLTZENDORFF ... *Handbuch des Völkerrechts*, 1889
.et seq., 4 vols.
OPPENHEIM ... *International Law*, Vol. I, see also
its bibliography.

INDEX

- al-'Abbās, 134
 al-'Abbās-ibn-Māhān, 110
 Abbasids, 21, 64, 70, 76, 77, 91, 92,
 116, 122, 131, 137, 215, 225,
 app. A.
 'Abd-ibn-Julandā, 94fn.
 (banū) 'Abd-ibn-'Adīy, 289
 'Abd 'Amr, 186
 'Abdul-Laṭīf, Prof., 18
 'Abdullāh-ibn-Abī-Umāmah al-
 Bahiliy, 124
 'Abdullāh-ibn-Su h a i l-i b n-' Amr,
 268
 'Abdullāh-ibn-Ubaīy, 154
 'Abdul-Malik, 102
 'Abdul-Mun'im-al-Baghdādīy, 26
 'Abdul-Qais, the, 287
 'Abdur-Rahmān-ibn-'Awf, 7, 186,
 268. app. A.
 'Abdur-Rahm ā n-i b n-R a b ī' a h al-
 Bahiliy Dhūn-Nūr, 272fn.
 'Abdur-Raḥīm, 30
 'Abdur-Razzāq, 124, 155
 Abnā', the, 287
 Abraham, 55
 Abraham, the Prophet, 35
 Abū-Bakr, Caliph, 17, 44, 45, 122,
 126, 156fn., 161, 167, 268, app.
 A.
 Abū-Dahm, 125 tris.
 Abū-Dāwūd, 124
 Abū-Ḥanīfah, 2, 8 tris, 25 tris, 82,
 102, 174fn., 246, 264
 Abū-Ḥanīfah's Law Academy, 25
 Abū-Ḥanīfah's parents, 35
 Abū-Ḥurairah, 124
 Abū-Jahl, 141, 185
 Abū-Khirāsh, 58fn.
 Abū-Mūsā al-Ash'ariy, 135
 Abū-Nu'aim, 125
 Abū-Rāfi', 219
 Abū-Sa'id al-Khudriy, 124 bis.
 Abū-Safwān, 185, 186
 Abū-Sufyān, 118fn., 187, 200, 219
 Abū-Thawr, 242
 Abū-'Ubaidah, 232
 Abū-Ya'la al-Farrā', 216
 Abū-Yūsuf, 8, 75, 88, 100fn., 103,
 104, 120, 136, 143 tris, 144, 150,
 170, 207, 208, 223, 232
 Abul-A'la Maudūdīy, 30
 Abul-Ḥuqaiq, 219
 Abul-Fidā', 136
 Abus-Su'ūd, 83
 Abyssinia, 54, 55, 106 bis, 139, 177,
 258 bis, 296
 academy of law, Abū-Ḥanīfah's,
 25
 accretion, 88
 acids, 218
 acquisition of land, 8, 90
 acquisition of property, 82
 acts forbidden in war, 195
 acts permitted in war, 215
 'Ād, the 227, 228, 'Ādites
 'ādah, 32
 Adam, 39, 234
 Aden, 53, 56
 adherence to treaty, 270
 'Ādil-Shāh, 90fn., 95
 'Ādites, the, 172, 'Ād.
 'Ādl, the, 53
 administrative rules, 61
 administratorship, 81
 admirals, 32, app. A, 4b.
 adultery, 196, fornication
 advice, 79, 141
 aeroplane, 80

- Africa, 40
 age, 103, 110
 age for women volunteers, 244
 Aghlabites, the, 77
 Aḥābīsh, the, 53
 Aḥmad-ibn-Ṭulūn, 116
 Aḥmad-Rashīd (Ahmed Réchid), 29 bis, 30
 Ailah, 130, 253 tris, 258
 air, 80, 97
 'Ā'ishah, 173, 244, 245
 Ākilul-Murār, 53
 Āl Māsūq, 53
 Alexandria, 64
 alien, 58, 108
 'Alīy, caliph, 44, 45, 79fn., 122, 126, 127, 142, 145, 156fn., 166, 167, 168, 169fn., 171, 172 bis, 173, 187, 225, 226, 245, 268, 281, 292
 'Alīy's decisions collected, 25
 'Alīy-ibn-Mas'ūd, 69fn., 70fn.
 allegiance, 69, 84, 92, 229
 alliance & allies, 169, 202, 259
 alliance, ceremony of, 54
 allied territory, 129
 allies of enemy, 194
 Alp Arsalān, 136
 alphabet, 47
 Amalekites, the, 47, 172
 amanuenses, 16
 Amases, Pharaoh, 129
 ambassador, 32, 46, 47, 49, 55, 118
 ambassador, immunity to, 164
 ambulance, 271
 Ameer-'Alī, 136
 amendment of treaty, 263, 269
 America, 40
 America, Arab discovery of, 88
 (banū) 'Āmir, the, 202
 'Āmir-ibn-aḏ-Zarīb, 57
 Amirul-Mu'minin's title in Spain, 92
 al-'Āmirīy, 24fn.
 amnesty, 197, 201
 amphictyonic league, the, 48
 'Amr-ibn-Marḥad, 53
 'Amūdaryā, 89
 analogical deduction, 4
 analogy, 23
 A'naq-lyamūt, 134
 anarchist, 142
 anarchy, 166
 Anas-ibn-Abi-Marḥad al-Ghnawīy, 134
 (banū) al-Anbar, the, 260
 animals 196
 annexation, 87, 90
 Anṣār, the, 69, 234
 Antioch, 64
 apostacy, 79, 115, 156, 161, 162, 181, 197, 287
 appurtenant land, 84
 'Aqabah, 130, 187fn., 253
 Arabia, 32, 35, 36, 44, 49, 50, 52, 53, 55, 56, 57 bis, 102, 158, 232, 235, 278, 287
 Arabs, 49, 91, 110, 111, 131, 190
 arbitration & arbitrator, 15, 57, 79, 127, 141, 143, 209
 arbitrator, qualities of, 143
 Aristotle, 25, 48
 Armanazī, Negīb, 29
 Armenia, 35
 armed forces, 269
 armistice, 59, 254
 armour, 231, wargear, warkit
 arms, laying of, 201, 226
 army, non-Muslim King's Muslim, 113
 army court and judge, 271, 272fn.
 army, filing of, 123
 arrow, 198, poison arrow
 art, 51
 artisans, 210
 (banū) Asad, the, 53
 Ashja', the, 259fn.
 Aslam, the, 53, 57
 Aslam Jairājpurī, 18
 al-Ash'ariy, 135
 assimilation of foreigners, 58fn.
 assassination, 142, 218
 associators, 72

- astrologer, 33
 astronomy, 66
 Aswad the shepherd, 187
 Aswān, 291
 asylum, 290, 296
 atheist, 72
 'Aṭīyah-ibn-Qais al-Kilābīy, 120
 auction, 238
 Aundh State, 112fn.
 aunt 203
 aunt of the Prophet, 245
 authority of state, origin of, 73
 autonomy, judicial, 99
 award of arbitration, 15, 30
 Awrangzeb, 21, 25
 Aws, the, 69fn.
 Awṭās, 134
 al-Awzā'iy, 8
 Ayala, 64, 65
 Ayūbids, the, 136
 A'ẓamgaḥ, 30
 azān, 109, service call
- Barbarians, 48, 63
 base of operation, 294fn.
 Baṣrah, 90fn., 109, Bussorah
 Basūs, war of, 279
 baton, 123, 124
 beasts, 172, 231
 Becker, C. H., 27
 bedding, 251fn
 bedouins, 123, 127
 beggar, 101
 behaviour, 7, 9
 behaviour of Muslims in foreign
 land, 114
 beheading, 177, 223, 274, decapita-
 tion, killing
 beheading prisoners, 206
 Belgium, 62
 belligerent rights, 12
 belligerent state, 118, 119
 belligerents, 62
 Bello, Pierre, 64
 benevolent neutrality, 296
 Bengal, 93fn.
 Benjamin, 104fn.
 Bentwich, N., 63
 Berar, 95, 236fn.
 Berber, the, 102
 Berberland, 34
 Bergstässer, Prof., 18
 bequests, 80
 Berne, 31fn.
 Bible, 48, 230
 al-Bīhārīy, Muḥibbullāh, 13
 Black Sea, 84
 Bilāl, 7, app. A
 blind, the, 100, 195, 201
 blind-folding, 248
 blockade, pacific, 148
 blood money, 191, 272, 274
 boarding house, 116
 boats, 86, 87, 253
 body guard, 114
 Bombay, 34, 109
 books, 82, manuscript
 booty, 59, 72, 98, 106, 124, 163, 170,
 174, 200, 209, 212, 295, saḥab
- Badr, 57, 123, 186, 206, 212, 220,
 223, 224, 237 bis, 239, 246fn.,
 257
 Badruddīn, see Ibn-Jumā'ah
 Baghdād, 64, 77, 91, 92, 94, 109,
 137 bis, 138
 Bahmanī Muḥammad King of Bengal,
 93fn.
 Bahmanites, the, 93
 Baḥrain, 51, 53, 94, 102, 257, 265, 287
 al-Baihaqīy, 125
 Bayāsirah, the, 109, Baiṣar
 Baitul-Māl, 40, 101
 Bakr, the, 59fn.
 (banū) Bakr, the, 268
 Bakrites, the, 279, 280
 Balharā king, 109, 110, 111
 bandits, 214, brigands, highwaymen,
 pirates
 banishment, 177, 178
 banners, 235
 al-Barā'-ibn-Malik, 241

- booty, distribution of, 221, 237, 239, 240,
 booty, law of, 237
 booty officer, 272fn.
 booty, pagan law of, 242
 booty, kinds of, 59fn., 238
 border district, confinement to, 178
 Bordwell, 28
 borrowing, 104, 125, loans
 boundaries, 82, 88, 89, 90, 189, frontier
 breach of treaty, 182
 breach of treaty with non-Christians ordained by Pope, 63fn.
 bread, 207
 bride money, 196, 269, nuptial gift, dowry
 brigands, 177, bandits
 Britain, 236fn.
 Brockelmann, 24fn.
 brotherhood, 40, 41, 43
 Buddhists, the, 35
 Buddhist Law, 50
 budget, 266
 buffer state, 77
 buildings, 82
 Bukhārā, 35
 al-Bukhārī, 118, 204, 223, 245 bis, 281
 Bulghār, 93
 bull, Papal, 63
 Burhānuddīn al-Marghīnānī, 218
 burial, 172, 246, 254
 burial of beheaded criminals, 112
 burning, 217fn.
 burning alive, 197
 bursaries, 116
 Bussorah, 137, Baṣrah
 Buzurg-ibn-Shahriyār, 110
 Byzantines, their empire & Government, 34, 49, 55, 65, 78, 90, 92, 107, 138, 211, 255, 265, 278
 Caetani, 267fn.
 Cairo, 86, 101, 116
 caliph, 15, 126
 caliph, non-Quraishite, 81fn.
 caliph, orthodox, 20, orthodox caliphs
 caliph prayed in China & India, 109, 113
 caliphate. see Khilāfat
 call to prayer, 109, azān
 calligraphy, 211
 camp, 124, 125, 127ff., 172, 269
 camp followers, 173, 194
 camp officer, 272fn.
 camp secretary, 272fn.
 canal, 85, 86, 101
 Cananites, the, 63
 cancellation of the Qur'an, 16
 canon law Muslim, 31
 cannibalism, 46
 cannon, earliest use of, 217
 capacity reduced, legal, 106
 capitulation tax, 91, 100, 101, 102, jizyah, protection tax
 capitulation (privileges), 107, 129, cf. 99
 capitulation (surrender) 142, 193, 208, 230
 captive, 196, 215, prisoners
 caravans, 54, 134
 cartel, 212
 Carthage, 47
 cases & precedents, 286
 cases, collection of, 25
 Caspian Sea, 113
 castles, 218, fort
 caste, low, 112
 catapults, 219, manjanīq
 cavalry, 239
 ceremonies of alliance, 54
 Chaigān, 30
 Chenchā, king, 109
 change in river's course, 88, 89
 charity, 100, 101
 Chaul city, 109
 chief of Muslims in foreign countries, 109

- children, 72, 114, 184, 194, 203, 209, 250
- children, when to kill, 215
- China & Chinese, 35, 53, 87, 112, 113, 137fn.
- chivalry, order of, 58
- Chosroes, 94fn.
- Christian dress, 218
- Christian Service in Mosque, 140
- Christians, 35, 77, 102, 260
- Christians worse than barbarians, 63
- Christianising slaves compelled by French, 211fn.
- Christianity, 62, 63, 131
- Christianity no uniting force, 64
- church, app. A, 2a.
- church, donation by Muslims to, 131
- church augments horrors of war, 64
- city, 233
- city state, 1, 39, 48, 50, 52, 60, 61, 202, 258
- city state, confederal, 190
- civil law, 250
- civil war, 165-7, 281, 291
- civilised nations, 63
- clericalism, 63
- closing roads, 222
- cloths, 207, 251, 252
- coats of arm, 231
- codes, early Muslim, 24
- codification of Muslim law, 33fn.
- coercion, 77, 162
- coins, 93
- collective might of community, 81, 82
- Collinet, 60fn.
- colonisation, 88
- colour, 40, 41, 42
- combatant, 184, 201
- commander, privileges of, 59
- commerce, 49, 54, 85, 129, 185, 189, 267
- commerce patronised by Prophet, 135
- commerce with enemy, 252
- commercial agents, 134
- commonwealth, 39
- communal chief, 99fn., 131fn., chief community, 81.
- Compagnie des Indes, 211fn.
- companions of the Prophet, 16, 19, 20, 111, 206, 208
- compensation of gain, 89
- compulsion by French to Christianise slaves, 211fn.
- conciliation, 141
- condominium, 70fn., 91, 236
- conduct, 8, 10
- conduct in war, 189
- confederation, 190
- conferences, 26, Madinah Conferences
- confiscation of land, 232
- conflict of laws, 5
- Confucius, 25
- conquest, 89, 90, 229
- conscience, freedom of, 106, 157
- conscription, 99
- consensus of opinion, 15, 21ff., 161, 206
- consent of states, 2
- Constantine V., 205
- Constantinople, 91, 138
- consternated, 218
- constitution, 202
- constitution of city state of Madinah, 184
- consul, 135
- contraband, 192, 251
- contract, 98, covenant, treaty, pact
- contractors, 194, 197
- convents, 100
- conventions, 32, 36
- conversion, 106, 112, 113, 209, proselytism
- conversion of slaves, 187, 211fn.
- conversion punished, 107
- converts, 269
- cooks, 244
- Cordova, 64
- corpse, 246
- corregnum, 236fn.

- court, enemy's right to sue in decapitation, 195, beheading
 Muslim, 250
 court, rebel's, 169
 court, army, 271
 covenant, execution of, 101
 crimes, 119, 121, 179
 Crete, 148
 criminal, 250
 criminals, 197
 crippled, 100
 cross, 235
 crown, 279
 crown land, 236
 crucifixion, 176, 177
 cruelty, 195
 crusades, 64, bis, 134, 217
 Ctesiphon, 55
 cultivated land, 231
 culture, 64
 custom & usage, 1, 2, 5, 15, 32, 34,
 36, 61, 108
 customs duty abolished, internal, 135
 customs-free goods, 135
 Cyprus, 92, 292, 293

 Dabā, 53, 56
 ad-Dabūsiy, 76
 dacoits, 177, bandits
 damages, 202, 272
 Damascus, 29, 44, 136
 (banū) Ḍamrah, the, 259fn., 288
 tris.
 ad-Dārimīy, 124
 date fruits, 259
 date leaves, 16
 daughters, 203
 dead, treatment of, 244, 246, 254
 dead body of enemy, 246
 dearth due to excess of supply,
 136
 deaths, 103
 death penalty, 112
 debts, 121, 188, 228, 250, loan,
 borrowing
 debts of enemy, 187, 274a
 Deccan, 95
 Decius, 278
 declaration of war, 59, 181, 184
 declaration of war, effects of, 184
 deduction, 23
 defamation, 120
 defeat's effect on debt, 274a
 defence, methods of, 217
 Delhi, 30
 delict, 111, 121
 delirious, 195
 deliverance, war of, 166, 167
 Delphi, 48
 demilitarisation, 254
 demobilise, 255
 denunciation of treaty, 260, 264,
 notice
 dependant, nominally, 92
 deposit, 188
 deposition of ruler, 81, 174
 depredation, 178
 derelict land, 82fn.
 desert, 83
 desirable acts, 106
 despotism, 81
 destructive weapons, 171
 detention of envoys, 140, 147, 248,
 269
 Deutronomy, 72fn., 209fn., 234fn.
 devastation, 196, 198
 dhādah, the, 58, chivalry
 dhimmis, 11, non-Muslim subjects
 Dhul-Kulā', 287 bis
 Dhul-Majāz, 56
 diarchy, 69
 diplomacy, 134
 discord, 78, 177, 216
 discount on capitalising long-term
 debt, 274a
 discovery of islands, 87, America
 discretionary punishment, 178
 ad-Dīsh, the, 53
 disliked acts, 106, improper
 distance, 219
 distribution of booty, 237, booty

- distribution of booty cancelled, 213
- ditch warfare, 217
- Divine right, 81
- diviner, 57
- dogs, 272
- Dome of Rock, 94fn.
- domicil, 58, 112
- Dongola city, 108
- douane, 135, customs, import
- dowry, 90, bride money, nuptial gift
- dress, 108, 109
- dual subjection, 92
- Duj'umites, the, 278, 279
- Dumatul-Jandal, 7, 52, 56 bis, 57, 154, 236
- dumping, 136
- Dupleix, 211fn.
- duties of Muslims, 78
- duties, kinds of, 43

- earth, ownership of, 73, 74
- Eastern Roman Empire, 49, Byzantine
- economic federation, 56
- economic pressure, 148
- effects of peace-treaty, 261
- Egypt, 35, 47, 49, 51, 87, 104fn., 129, 236fn., 267, 291 bis, 294fn.
- elasticity, 4
- election, 69, 70
- elements of peace treaty, 261
- elephants, 110
- emancipation, 209, 272, manumission
- emancipation a government duty, 204
- embassies, 97, 228, envoy, ambassador
- empire, 39
- envoy, 55, 118fn., 134, 184, 247, 248, ambassador, embassies
- end of war, 257
- enemy, relief to, 184, 266
- enemy message-bearer, 247, 248
- enemy person, 59, 160, 192
- enemy, rights of, 62, 65
- enfeoffment, 228, 232, jāgīr, fief
- England, 294fn.
- enslavement, 118, 119, 209, 295, slave
- enslavement prohibited, 235
- enslavement of thief, 104fn.
- equipment of army, 236
- equality, 23, 133
- equality, Islamic, 72, 73
- escape from captivity, 204
- escort, 52, 53
- ethical basis, 66
- ethical law, 37
- ethnic unity of man, 39
- Euphrates, 46, 85, 86, 88fn.
- Europe, 40, 48, 60, 136, 137
- Europe, why first time united, 64
- evacuation, 188, 269fn.
- Eve, 39
- evil, 78
- excess, 196
- exchange of territory, 90
- exchange of prisoners, 205, 212, 238, 248
- executor of Prophet's will, 45
- exemption from jizyah, 101
- expedition, 124
- export, 251
- export of weapon, 252, contraband
- expulsion, 178, 231, 274a
- expulsion of undesirables from conquered territory, 214
- extermination of highwaymen, 179
- extradition, 47, 58, 107, 108, 117, 131, 178, 269
- extra-territoriality & exterritoriality, 106, 129, 269

- Fadak, 231, 238 bis, 258
- Fagnan, 27
- fairs, 53, 57, 58
- faithful, 40, 43
- famine, 136, 266
- famine relief, 216
- Faramā, 86
- al-Farrā', Abū-Ya'lā, 216

- Farrukhān, 290
fatwā as against *taqwā*, 246
 feasts, 235
 federation, economic, 56
 female forces, 245,
 Féróz Shāh, 93
 festival, 113
 fetials, 49
 fief, 86, enfeoffment, *jāgīr*
 fifth of booty, 237
 fines, 111, 112, 221
 fines on neglect of Friday service
 in Hindu States, 111, 112
 Finlay, 205, 212fn.
fiqh, 2, 3, 4, 65
 fire, 197, 198, 218
 fire of pact, 54, ceremonies
 fire-worshipper, 103
 flag of truce, 226
 flame thrower, 217
 flood, 254
 flooding of enemy, 217fn., 218
 fodder, 220, 221
 food, 220, 249, 251, 252
 foot, amputation of, 177
 forbidden acts in war, 105, 195
 forgery, 119
 forms, of government, 69, 70
 formation of army, 123, 217
 ornication, 120, 196, adultery
 forts, 217, 218, 231, 232
 fortress, 245
 fourth of booty, 242
 foreign Muslims, 116
 foreigners, 5, 11, 14, 121
 foreigners, protected, 120, *dhimmis*
 fraction of taxable things, 231
 France, 211fn.
 free person, 178
 free trade, 136
 - freedom of Man, origin of, 71
 French compelled their slaves to
 Christianise, 211fn.
 French East India Co., 211
 Friday, 111, 112fn.
 Friday sermon, 77, 92
 Friday service, 109
 Fries, 226fn.
 frontier, 82, boundary
 fundamentals of law, 4

 Gabriel, 16, 123
 gain always with sufferance, 89
 gases, poison, 218
 genologism, 50
 generals, 32, commander
 Gentiles, Prof., 64, 65
 Gentiles, the, 199
 Germany, 294
 Ghānah, 111
 Ghassān & Ghassānids, the, 127,
 257, 278 bis, 279 passim
 Ghaznah, 69fn.
 Ghifār, banū Ghifār, the 259fn., 288
 Ghaṭafān, the, 53, 57, 259, 286, 287
 Ghūlāmān (slave) dynasty, 93fn.
 gift, 87, 90, 138
 gift instead of booty, 240
 gift, official, 139
 goats, 123, 125, 187, sheep
 God the law-giver, 4
 golden mean, the, 67
 Goldzieher, 18
 good and evil, 3
 good offices, 79, 141
 Gospel, 62, 63, 130
 grains, 186, food
 gratuitous release of prisoners, 212
 graves of fighting soldiers, 244
 graveyard, 112
 grazing camel, 125
 Greece & Greeks, 35, 47, 48, 60 bis,
 61, 129, 214
 Greeks enslaving the world, 71
 Grotius, 63, 65
 guard of women for stores, 244
 guardian, 267
 gubernatorium, 37
 guest house, 139
 guides and sources, 3, 4
 Gujrāt, 109, Lār

- Ḥabīb-ibn-Maslamah, 123
 habit, 36
 ḥadīth, 4, 18
 Ḥaḍramawt, 53, 56
 ḥafīẓ of Qur'an, 17
 Ḥafṣah, 18
 Hague, the, 29 bis
 al-Ḥaiyā, the, 53
 ḥajj, 35, 41, 42, 43, 56, 267, pilgrim-
 mage
 al-Ḥajjāj-ibn-Yūsuf, 108
 al-Ḥakam-ibn-Hishām, 126
 al-Ḥalabīy, Ibrāhīm, 84
 Ḥamidullāh, M., 20
 Ḥ amzah, 141
 al-Ḥaṣkafīy, 84
 al-Ḥamawīy, 83
 al-Ḥāmiliy, 83
 Ḥanafites, the, 162, 181, 240
 hand, amputation of, 177
 hand, holding up, 226
 Haneberg, 27
 (banū) Ḥanīfah, 279
 ḥarim-land, 84, 85
 Ḥārith-ibn-'Abbād, 280 bis
 Ḥārith-ibn-Suwaid, 274
 Ḥārūn ar-Rashīd, caliph, 77, 91,
 150
 harvest, 196
 al-Ḥasā', 56
 al-Ḥasan, 90
 Ḥatay, 47
 Ḥaṭīb-ibn-Abi-Balta'ah, 222, 223
 Hatscheck, 27
 Hawāzin, the, 53, 209, 213
 Hawdhah-ibn-'Alīy, 94fn.
 head of state, 122
 head severing, 196
 Hebrew, 47, 63
 Hedjaz, 52, Ḥijāz
 Heffening, 27, 267fn.
 Helpers, the 234, Anṣār
 Heraclius, 94fn.
 hereafter, 13, 66
 herd of goats 118
 hereditary succession, 69
 hermaphrodite, 162
 hermit, 195
 hides, 187
 Hierapolis, 135
 highwaymen, 11, 177, bandit
 Ḥijāz, 261, Hedjaz,
 Hilāl al-Ḥajariy, 272fn.
 ḥilful-fuḍūl, 58
 Ḥimṣ, 188
 Hind, 110
 Hindus, the, 108, 109, immigration-
 laws
 Hindu qāzi of Muslims, 112fn.
 Ḥirah, 53fn.
 history, 66
 Hitaser, 47
 Hittites, the, 47
 ḥiyādah, 277, neutrality
 Holtzendorff, 28
 holy circle, 289
 homage, 69
 homage to caliph, 93
 homage of Shi'ahs to Sunni caliph,
 94
 honour, 125, 204
 horse, 242, 251
 horse, postliminium of, 243fn.
 horseman's share of booty, 238,
 cavalry
 horsemanship of women, 245
 hospitals, 271
 Hospitalers, the, 64
 hospitality, 58
 hostages, 59, 174, 196, 262, 264
 hostile relations, 147
 house, 85
 House of God, 265, Ka'bah
 household goods, 251fn.
 Huart, C., 27
 Ḥubāshah, 57
 Ḥudaibīyah, 5, 132, 140, 144, 148,
 153fn., 191, 222, 259, 261, 265,
 266, 268, 289, 290 bis.
 human society, 39
 humanitarian grounds, 185
 Ḥunain, 123, 182, 239

- Hunarmah & Hunarman, the, 109,
 110 tris, 135
 Husail-ibn-Jabir, 274
 husband, 103, 269
 Huṭai'ah, 81fn.
 Hyderābād, 236fn.
 hypocrisy & hypocrites, 156, 274,
 283

 Ibn-'Abd-Rabbihi, 55
 Ibn-'Ābidīn, 83
 Ibn-'Asākīr, 123
 Ibn-Faḍlullāh, 133
 Ibn-Ḥabīb, 7, 274
 Ibn-Ḥanbal, 35, 124
 Ibn-Ḥawqal, 111
 Ibn-Ḥibbān, 123, 125
 Ibn-Hishām, 7, 124, 141, 150, 274
 Ibn-Ḥumaid, 124
 Ibn-Ishāq, 123
 Ibn-Jahsh, 237
 Ibn-Jubair, 115
 Ibn-Jumā'ah, Badruddīn, 103, 241
 Ibn-Khaldūn, 70
 Ibn-Qānī', 124
 Ibn-Rushd, 25, 206
 Ibn-Sa'd, 8, 139, 177
 Ibn-Taimiyah, 178, 179
 Ibn-Ṭūlūn, 116
 Ibn-'Umar, 243fn.
 Ibrāhīm, see Ḥalabīy
 Ibrāhīm Ḥaqqī, 28
 'īd (festival), 92
 'īd service, 111
 idolators, 123
 idolators, Arab, 181
 Idrisites, the, 77
 Ignorance, days of, 36
 'Ijl, the, 279
ijmā', 21, consensus
ikhwānuṣ-Ṣafā', the, 25
Ilāf-pacts, 54
 indigent (miskīn), meaning of, 100,
 101
 influence, importance of, 215
 inheritance, 5, 90, 121
 immigration-laws of Hindus, 108
 immunity to envoy, 139
 immunity to ruler, 122
 implications of a passport, 250
 import customs, 122, customs
 imports, 253
 imposter, 140
 improper acts, 105, 116
 incarnation, 73
 independence, 68
 independence defined, 70
 independence only relative, 71
 India, 21, 34, 53, 70 bis, 93 bis. 95 bis.
 102, 108, 111
 India, Muslim, 90
 infantry, 238, 239
 injury must be removed, 89
 insane & insanity, 162, 174, 195,
 201
 inscription, 55
 instructions of Prophet, 32
 instructions, official, 15, 32 app. A
 instructions to commanders & admi-
 rals, 72fn., 199, app. A
 insurrection, 166, 167
 interdependence, 134
 inter-Muslim clash, 273
 International Law defined, 1, 9
 international law's history, 46
 international law's place, 37
 international law's object, 13
 international law's sanction, 14
 international law's sources, 15ff.
 international law's subject, 11
 internationalistion, 39
 interpretation, 263, 269
 interpreter 247, 272fn.
 intervention, 77, 78, 79
 intoxication, 120, 162
 investiture, 131fn.
 Irān, 49, 54 bis, 60, 172, 265, 294fn.
 Irāq, 108, 113, 232, 266, 267, 280,
 294fn.
 Irene empress, 91
 Iroquois, the, 46

- 'Iṣāmī, 70fn.
islāl, 289, 290
 Islam, meaning of, 72
 islands, 88
 Ismaelites, the, 281
 Istanbul, 28
 Italy, 64
i'tizāl, 277
- Jabalah-ibn-al-Aiham, 127
 Jacobites, the, 131
 (banū) Jadhimah, the, 272
 Ja'far, aṭ-Ṭaiyār, 296 bis
 Jagir, 86, fief, enfeoffment
 Jaifar-ibn-al-Julandā, 94fn.
 al-Ja'irānah, 125
 Jamal, battle of, 245
 Japan, 63
 Jār, 58fn.
 al-Jārūd, 287
 Jerusalem, 63, 94fn.
 Jesus Christ, 35, 48, 62
 Jews, 34, 35, 47, 48, 101, 102, 129,
 130, 141, 190, 191, 199, 202, 203,
 209, 214, 231, 245, 259, 260, 265,
 283, 287, 289
 Jewish imperialism, 71
 Jewish law, 33, 130
jihād, 9
 Jiljilān, 290
 jizyah, 91, 158, 181, 234, capitation
 tax, protection tax
 (St.) John, 62
 (St.) John, order of, 64
 John son of Rubin, 253
 Joint-rule, 69
 Jönpūr, 93fn.
 Joseph the Patriarch (Yūsuf), 104fn.
 judge, 111
 judge and party in one, 126
 judgement, day of, 105
 judicial decisions, 23
 al-Julandā-ibn-al-Mustakbir, 53
 Jurhumites, the, 280, 281
 Jurisconsults, 3, 22, 25, 78, 105
- jurisdiction, 76, 96, 97, 104, 105, 120,
 121, 122, 127, 131, 169, 201, 205,
 227, 243, 269, 295
 jurisdiction of camps, 127ff.
 jurists, 4
 (banū) al-Jusham, the, 52
 justice, 52
 Justinian, 49
 Juynboll, 27
- Ka'b-ibn-al-Ashraf, 219
 Ka'bah, 42, 55, 66, 185, 200, house of
 God
 al-Kalbiy, 56
 Karaløvski, 131fn.
 al-Kāsāniy, 144, 150, 215, 252
 al-Kattāniy, 19
 Kautilya, 25
 Khaibar, 56, 130, 154, 182, 187, 202,
 220, 231 bis, 238 bis, 239 bis, 245,
 258 bis, 265 passim, 272fn., 286, 287
 Khālid-ibn-al-Walid, 231, 245, 262
 Khalij Amīr al-Mu'minīn, 102fn.
 Khalīl, 198
 Khandaq, battle of, 246, 257, 271,
 274
 Khānfū, 112, 113
 Khārijites, the, 156, 166, 277, 278
 Kharijites and Khilāfat, 44
 al-Khaṭīb al-Baghdādīy, 20, 25fn
 Khazar, the, 111, 113, 114 bis
 Khazraj, the, 69fn.
 Khalīfah, 28, 41, 43, 74, caliph
 Khilji dynasty, 93fn.
 Khirāsh, 58fn.
 Khirrit, 292
 al-Khudriy, Abū-Sa'id, 124 bis
 Khurāsān, 290
 Khuẓā'ah, the, 268, 280, 281
 Khwārizm, 113
 al-Kilābiy, 'Aṭīyah-ibn-Qais, 120
 Killing, 215, beheading, decapitation
 al-Kināniy, 'Sirājuddīn 'Umar-ibn-
 'Alīy, 83
 Kindah, 53

- king can do no wrong, 122
 kingdom of God, 62, 72
 kingdom of God on earth, 180
 knight, 280
 knowledge, 51
 Krenkow, 54
 Kūghan, 111
 Kulaib, 280

 lake, 82, 83
 Lān, 111
 lands, kinds of, 235ff.
 land, neglected & uncultivated, 231
 land reclamation, 87
 land, unowned, 82fn., territory derelict.
 language, 41, 42, 50
 lapidation of adulterer, 196
 Lār, 109, Gujrāt
 Larshia Turks, 113
 law, 2
 Law Academy of Abū-Ḥanīfah, 25
 laws of the Muslims, 34
 laws, division of Muslim 36,
 lawful war according to Muslims, 72fn.
 League of Nations, 294fn.
 legal capacity, 106
 legal science, 22
 legal and moral, distinction between 104
 legates, 136
 legislation, internal, 15, 32
 lending, 104, loan, borrowing
 liberation of prisoner compulsory, 210
 Lingāyat, the, 102
 literature on international law, 23, app. B., bibliography.
 litigation, 121
 loan, 105, lending
 Lodhi dynasty, 93fn.
 lowest of Muslims, power of, 201
 lunatics, 100, delirious
 Luther, Martin, was an Arabist, 64
 lynching, 107
 Ma' ān, 107
 al-Ma'barīy, Zainuddīn, 111
 Macdonell, J., 1
 Madīnah, 34, 44, 69, 79, 106 bis, 118 bis, 129, 133, 139, 142, 154 tris, 164, 184, 185, 186, 187, 190, 191, 202 bis, 203, 230, 232, 234, 237, 259 passim, 270, 283, 287, 288 bis, 289.
 Madīnah Conference, 26, Conferences
 Maghāribah, the, 116
 Magians, the, 35, Majūs
 Maharah, 53, 56 bis
 al-Mahdīy, caliph, 91
 Maḥmūd of Ghaznah, 69fn., 93fn.
 Maḥmūd-ibn-Māslamah, 268
 Maḥmūd Shāh, 93
 Majannah, 57
 Majdīy-ibn-'Amr, 141
 majority, age of, 103
 Majūs, 102fn., Magians
 Malabār, 34, 108, 111 tris
 Malaṭīyah, 90, 211
 Malay Peninsula, 34
 Malik Shāh, 136
 Mālik, 25, 35
 Mālikites, the, 241
malikut-tujjār, 135
 Māiwah, 93fn.
 Manāẓir Aḥsan, Prof., 19
 Manbij, 135
 Mangalore, 90fn.
 manjanīq, 217fn., catapult
 Ma'mūn, Caliph, 278
 Maṣṣūr, 91, 126, 174fn., 264
 manumission, 209, emancipation, slave
 manuscripts, 116, books
 Ma'qil-ibn-Qais, 172
 Maqnā, 130
 al-Maqrīziy, 205
 al-Marghināniy, Burhānuddīn, 218, 274
 Ma'rib dam, 55, 280
 marine wars, 217, sea, admiral

- marriage, 103
marriage of Prophet with prisoner girls, 209
al-Marzūqīy, 56
Masrūq, the, 53
massacres, 47, 196
master of ceremonials, Prophet's, 137
Mas'ūd of Ghaznah, 70fn.
al-Mas'ūdīy, 109, 112, 113, 249
Mathew, 62
Maudūd of Ghaznah, 69, 70fn.
mawlā, 267, *Mawālī*
mawlā, great significance of, 58fn.
al-Māwardīy, 126, 151, 163, 168 bis, 182
mawālī, 335, *mawlā*
meat, 85
Mecca & Meccans, 16, 22, 32, 34, 51fn. 55, 69, 77fn., 107, 117 bis, 127, 132, 134, 139, 140 bis, 141, 182, 185 passim, 186, 187, 190, 191, 197 bis, 200, 216, 222 bis, 237, 252, 255, 258 bis, 265 passim, 266, 267, 268, 269 passim 280, 281, passim, 286, 289 bis.
Mecca, foreign department of, 55
mediation, 141
medical men, 271
Mediterranean, 47, 86
memorising the Qur'ān, 16, ḥāfiẓ
merchant, 109, 112, 197
Merv, 136
Mesopotamia, 35, 118
message-bearer of enemy, 247, 248, envoy, embassies, ambassador
Messenger of God, 3, 7, 35, Prophet
Middle Ages, 60 bis
migration, 98
migration of the Prophet, 187, 190
Mikraz-ibn-Ḥafṣ, 268
military service, 101
military service, compulsory, 99
Minā, 56
non-Muslim king a
Muslim, 114.
mines, marine, 217
minerals, 80
minors, 122, 162, 194, 195, 201, 223
minorities, treatment of, 76, 107
mission of Islam, 156ff.
mistake, 219, 273
mixed court, 114
monarchy, 69
money, 82, 104, 211
Mongols, the, 137
monitors, 103
monks, 100, 195
monopoly, 85
Montesquieu, 46
moral law, 37
moral and legal, distinction between, 104
mortgage, 98, 121
Moses, 35, 47, 231
mosque, 32, 77, 107, 109, 110, 113, 114, 235
Mosul, 136
mother, 203, 207
Mother of the Faithful, 173
Mu'āwiyah, ḥaṭīf, 79fn., 90, 127, 142, 167 bis, 217, 226, 255, 264, 281
Mu'āwiyah-ibn-Mughīrah, 202
Muḍād, 281 passim
Muḍarites, the, 52
Mughal Empire, 70
al-Mughīrah-ibn-Shu'bah, 106
Muhallil, 53fn.
Muḥammad, the Prophet, 16, 41, 42, 72, 100, 268, Prophet
Muḥammad II., 131
Muḥammad-ibn-Ḥabīb, see Ibn-Ḥabīb
Muḥammad son of Maudūd, 69fn., 70fn.
Muḥammad-ibn-'Umar al-Aslamīy, 124, al-Wāqidiy
(banū) Muḥarib, the, 53
Muḥibbullah al-Bihārīy, 2
Majadhdhar-ibn-Dhiyād, 274
al-Mundhir-ibn-Sawā, 94fn.
al-Mundhir-ibn-'Amr as-Sā'idīy
134

- munition of war, 211
 al-Mushaqqar, 53, 56
 Munster, Lord, 226 fn.
 Muqauqis, daughter of, 208fn.
 al-Muqtadir Billah, 138
 murder, 104, 120, 177, 280, killing
 Mūsā-ibn-Ishāq as-Sandalūnīy, 109
 Mūsā-ibn-'Uqbah, 134fn.
 Musailimah the impostor, 140, 164
 Muslim the traditionist, 281
 Muslim and non-Muslim alike in
 worldly sufferings, 242
 Muslim as foreign citizen, 75
 Muslim detachments, clash between,
 219
 Muslim international law defined, 1
 Muslim laws, 34
 Muslim slave a contraband, 253
 Muslim state, 76
 Muslim states divided, 115
 Muslim and enemy rights of bellige-
 rency at par, 206
 Muṣṭafā Pāshā, 148
 Muslims' fraternity, 116
 (banū) al-Muṣṭaliq, the, 53, 182, 209,
 239
musta'min, 192, resident alien
 Mu'tah, 148
 Mu'taṣim, caliph, 91, 225
 Mutawakkil, caliph, 225
 Mu'tazilah, the, 277, 278
 mutilation, 172, 196
 mutiny, 166, 167, rebellion
 al-Muẓaffar, al-Malik, 136

 Nabatean caravans, 118
 (banū) an-Naḍir, the, 203, 230 bis,
 274a, 283, 286
 (banū) Nājiyah, the, 292
 Najrān, 130, 140, 258
 Nakhlah, 266fn.
 Nallino, Prof., 277
 Naqshbandiyah, order of, 44
 an-Nasa'iyy, 124
 an-Nāṣir 'Abdurrahmān, 92
 nation, 42
 nationality, 5, 39, 52, 99
 nationality, Muslim, 75
 naturalisation, 58, 98
 naturalisational methods, 103
 naturalisation of the conquered,
 214
 navel of the earth, 43
 Nawāb 'Alīy, Prof., 18
 Nazi, the, 294
 necessity, 31
 negotiation, 141
 negroes, 72, 211fn.
 Negus, 55, 94fn., 107, 296
 Nejd, 134
 Nestorians, 131
 neutralisation, 254
 neutralised territory, 129
 neutrality & neutrals, 59, 75, 115,
 119, 144, 190, 191, 194, 219, 236,
 271, 276 fn., 296
 news stopped, 222
 Nichephorus, 92
 Nicholas IV., pope, 63fn. (breach
 of promise enjoined by him)
 night attack, 219
 nihilist, 292
 Nile delta, 129
 Nishāpūr, 136
 Niẓām Shāh, 90fn., 95
 niẓām-ul-ḥadratain, post of, 137
 no-man's land, 83, 96, 97, 129, 202
 Nöldeke-Schwally, 18
 noise as a consternater, 218
 nomads, 50, 52
 nominal dependence, 76, 92
 nomination to caliphate, 70
 non-combatant, 194, 195, 215
 non-combatants, when to kill, 219
 non-contraband goods, 251
 non-hostile intercourse with enemy,
 247
 non-Muslim subject at home, 99
 non-Muslims, war with, 180
 North Africa, 34, 35
 North Africa, western, 116

- notice to determinate treaty, 260
 Nu'aim-ibn-Muqarrin, 291
 Nubia, 107, 132, 291
 nuptial gift, 269, bride money,
 dowry
 nurses, 244, 245, 271
 Nūruddin Mahmūd, 136
 Nys. E., 27, 28, 62, 63
- oath, 69
 obedience, 72
 obedience when prohibited, 175
 occupation, 87, 90, 229
 oceania, 88
 old men, 195
 one-sided extradition, 269
 open sea, 83, salt sea, 97
 opinion, 15, 23
 Oppenheim, Prof., 60
 oppression, 100
 oration of the Prophet, 188 fn.
 orders of Christian monks, 64
 origin of law, 3, 4
 ornaments, 85
 Orthodox Caliphs, 66, 70, 102, 130,
 286, 290, caliphs
 Osmania University, 19, 211
 ownership, 80, 81
 ownership, origin of, 82
 Oxus, river, 89
- pacts of *ḥlaf*, 54
 pacts with non-Christians null, 63
 Palestine, 232
 palm groves, 231
 Papacy, 63
 paper, 16
 paradise, 149, 180
 pardon, 179
 parents, 197
 parley, 59, 247
 parole, 204, 212
 Parsis, the, 102 fn.
 part-sovereign, 11
- part-sovereign state, 68
 party and judge in one, 126
 passage, 296
 passport, 52, 114, 117, 249
 passport, how to annul, 119
 pastures, 231
 path of God, 151, app. A.
 patriarch, 64
 Pauly, Leo, 53fn.
 paying for purchased goods, 220
 al-Pazdawīy, 23
 peace, 255, 259, 273
 peace, separate, 259
 peasants, 100, 197, 210
 penal code, 120, 272
 Pentateuch, 47
 perfidy, 196, 263
 permission to enemy for travel and
 transit, 84, 103, 249, passport
 permitted acts in war, 215
 perpetual alliance, 259
 persecution, 117, 269
 Persia & Persians, 34, 35, 49, 79fn.,
 87, 279
 Persians domiciled in Yaman, 287,
 Abnā
 Persians, laws of, 35
 person, enemy, 192
 personal character of Muslim law,
 104
 personal law, 99, 104fn., 230
 Pharaoh, 129
 Phillipson, 48, 61
 philology, 66
 Phœnicia & Phœnicians, 47, 48, 51,
 60, 194
 pigs, 218
 pilgrimage, 22, 35, ḥajj
 Pilgrimage, Last, 73fn., 124, 188fn.
 Pillar of Embassies, 137
 pillars of state, 70
 pirates, 11, 177
 Plato, 48
 plague, app. A. 2a.
 pledge, 105, 121, 264, 291
 pledge, violation of, 105

- pledge enjoined to Christians, violation of, 63fn.
- plunder, 106, 177
- poet, 280
- poison gases, 218
- poisoned arrows, 198, 217fn.
- polity, basis of Muslim, 161
- polytheists, 72, associators
- Pondicherry, 211fn.
- pontiff, 136
- popes, 63fn., 64.
- Portuguese, the, 111
- Port Sa'ïd, 86
- position & treatment of prisoners, 207
- possession, 90, 229
- post, 190
- postal convention, international 31 fn.
- postliminium, 242, 243
- pots, 251fn.
- practice, 5, 6, 15
- practice of Muslim rulers, 21
- practice, orthodox, 20, 21
- prayer, see service
- prediction, 282
- pre-emption, 86
- prevailing word of God alone, 180
- price, 136
- priests, 131
- primogeniture, 70
- privileges, 59, 129
- privileges in jurisdiction, 122, capitulation
- prisoners, 46, 59, 90, 164, 169, 171, 184, 195, 201, 207, 237, 250
- prisoners after enslavement and distribution, release of, 243
- prisoners, beheading of, 208
- prisoners cannot be killed, 206
- prisoners, duties of, 204
- prisoners, compulsory liberation of, 210
- prisoners, exchange of, 205, 248
- prisoners, feeding expenses of, 207
- prisoners killed under Jewish law, 230
- prisoners, labour of, 208
- prisoners made a shelter, 198
- prisoners, punishments of, 206
- private enterprise, 73
- private international law, 5, 49, 122
- private property, 236 ff.
- private war, 151
- probation period, 103
- procession, 235
- profession, 109
- propaganda, 216
- property, 80, 97, 101, 104, 105, 106, 125, 200
- property, capture of, 83
- property of enemy, 59, 220, 227
- property of rebels, 174
- property of refugees, 270
- property of state, 229
- property, private, 227
- property, suits against, 122ff.
- Prophet, the, Muḥammad, 7, 16
- Prophet's powers, 130
- prophet of battles and of mercy, 461
- prophets, 74
- prophets, laws of former, 35
- prophets, profession of, 9
- proselytism, 210
- prostration, 137
- protected people, 100, 101, dhimmi
- protected states, 91, 94
- protection tax, 102, 181, 214, 235, jizyah
- protection, individual, 96
- protest, 79
- provisional agreement, 258, 262
- proviso, 270
- public armed forces, 127
- public despise of Orthodox Caliphs, 78
- public service, 101
- public utility, 85
- punishment of prisoners, 209
- punitive action, 77
- Punjab, the, 34

- purchase, paying, 106
 purchase of booty, 295
 purchase, prior right of, 243
 pursuit of the defeated, 172, 179, 215
 Pyrenees, 35
- Qādi, 110, 114
 Qādir Hussain Khān, 112fn.
 Qādisiyah, 244, 245
 Qainuqā', the, 141, 182, 191
 Qais the Yamanite, 287
 Qais-ibn-Sa'd, 291
 (banū) Qais-ibn-Tha'labah, 53, 279
 al-Qalqashandīy, 132, 133
 Qarawīyīn Mosque Library, 123fn.
qaṣr-uṣ-ṣalāt, 99
qiyās, 23
 quarter, 58, 106, 169, 249
 quarter, definition of, 200
 quarter, exceptions to, 202
 quarter, scope of, 203
 quarter, temporary and conditional, 202
 quarter to the absent, 202
 quarter, revocation of, 202
 Quraish & Quaraishites, the, 52, 53, 55, 132, 148, 185, 202, 259, 265, 266, 267, 268 bis, 269, 289 bis.
 (banū) Quraizah, the 79 fn., 142, 182, 209, 230 bis, 274a, 286
 Qur'ān, 4, 15, 16, 66, 109
 Qur'ān, cancellation of, 16
 Qur'ān, compilation of, 17
 Qur'ān, copies of, 16
 Qur'ān on neutrality, 283 ff.
 Qur'ān, raised, copies of, 226
 Quḍā'ah, the, 281
 Quḍamah-ibn-Ja'far, 228, app. A
 Quṣaīy, 281
 Qutaibah, 137fn.
- race, 40, 50
 radio, 80
 Rādiuddin as-Sarakhsīy, 9
 Raḍīyah, Queen, 70
 Rai'y city, 291
 Ramlah-bin-al-Ḥārith, 139
 Ramses II., 47
 ransom, 210, 211, 237, 238
 ransom fixed for prisoners, 205
 ransom of prisoners by government, 204, 205
 ratification, 262
 razzia, 242
 Reader of Hidāyah, 83
 reason, 4
 rebel & rebellion, 11, 165, 166, 167, 168, 179, 290
 rebellion, leaders of, 176
 rebels, non-Muslim, 175
 reception of envoy, 137
 reciprocity, 107, 122
 reciter of Qur'ān, 17
 recited revelation, 16
 recitation of Qur'ān prohibited, 109
 reclamation of land, 88, 89
 red garment, 112
 Red Sea, 86 bis, 102, 253
 reference, judicial, 126
 refugees, 58, 106, 107, 108, 132, 296
 refugees in camp, 128, 269
 Refugees, property of Meccan, 270
 Refugees of Mecca, 233
 refugees, Muslim, 55
 register of naturalised foreigners, 103
 regular force, 239
 reign, reason of long, 110
 reinforcement, 245
 Reland, H., 26
 relatives, 207
 relief to enemy, 266, 271, ambulance
 religion, 50, 73, 103
 religion, national and universal, 40
 religious lore, 66
 renunciation of protection, 115, notice
- Rabi'ah, the 53, 279, 287
 Rābiyah, fair of, 53, 56, 57

- repairing banks of navigable rivers, Rusia & Russians, 114, 294fn.
 85
 repatriation, 78
 repentance of highwaymen, 179
 reporters, 194
 reprisals, 147, 198
 republic, 69
 requisition, 221
 resident alien, 11, 97, 117, 120, 128,
 192, 193, *musta'min*
 Resident, the, 94
 resisting or formidable power, 105
 responsa prudentium, 23
 restrictions on independence, 71
 resurrection, 66
 retaliation, 123, 147, 188
 revelation, 16, 69, 74
 revenue laws, 35
 revival of treaties, 190
 Reviver of the Kingdom of the
 Commander of the Faithful, 94
 revocation of quarter, 202
 rights of God, 120
 rights of man, 120
 rights of belligerency, 206, bellige-
 rent
 rich merchants, 109
 river, 82
 roads, 85, 222
 robbers & robbery, 178, 223, 290,
 292
 Roman Catholicism, 211fn.
 Roman empire, 61
 Roman law, 33, 49, 60 bis, 62
 Roman law influenced by East, 60
 Romans, lords of the world, 71
 Rome, 47, 48, 49, 137, 277
 Rome, back to, 63
 roots of law, 15
 rules of Muslim law classified, 31
 Rule and Faith distinguished, Isla-
 mic, 157
 ruler, deposition of Muslim, 174
 Rūm, 65, Byzantines
 Rūmis, 282, Westerners
 ruse, 215, 216
 Saba, 30
 Sabeans, 103
 sacred lands, 235
 Sa'd-ibn-Abi-Waqqāṣ, 268, 281
 Sa'd-ibn-Mu'adh, 185 *passim*
 ṣafīy, 241, 242, booty
 sailing boat, 84
 sailor, 110, 218
 Saimūr, 109, 110 bis
 salab, 240, 241, spoil, booty, ṣafīy
 Ṣalāhuddīn the Great (Saladin), 21,
 94, 116, 136, 217
 Sale, 87, 90
 Salmān al-Fārsīy, 272fn.
 salaries of Muslim religious offi-
 cials in Hindu states, 111
 salt sea, 83, 84, open sea
 Samaritans, 103
 Samuel, 47
 San'a', 56
 sandals, 123, 125
 as-Sandalūniy, 109
 as-Sarakhsīy, Raḍiuddīn, 74, 96
 as-Sarakhsīy (Shamsul-a'immah), 9,
 102, 104, 121, 151, 168, 169, 183,
 244, 294
 Sarīr, 11
 Satrap, Persian, 241
 Saudi Arabia, 99
 Schmidt, 27
 schools in mosques, 114
 scholars, 116
 Schwally, 18, 27
 Scot, S. P., 217
 scouts, military, 134
 script and alphabet, 60
 Scriptuaries, 101, 102
 Scriptuaries, practice of, 237
 sea, open, 83, salt sea
 sea under man's control, 85
 sea-warfare, 245, marine
 seal, 262fn., 268
 secret agents, 134, 216

- secret service, 216
 securities, 121
 self-defence, 77, 296
 self-defence of neutrals, 115, 296
 servants, 195, 203, 250
 services, daily religious, 98
 service morning, 124
 service call, 113, *adhān*
 service on battle-front, religious, 273
 Sesostriis, 47
 settlement in Arabia, non-Muslims barred from, 102
 Shāfi'ites, the, 181
 ash-Shāfi'iy, 8, 23, 35
 Shahbandar, post of, 135
 Shaibān, the, 280
 ash-Shaibāniy, 8, 75, 102, 120, 122, 135, 140, 151, 174, 189, 198, 218, 223, 245, 250, 261, 262, 263, 264, 274, 294
 ash-Sha'miy, 123
 ash-Sharanbilāliy, 83
 sharer of office, 236fn.
 shaving beards, 59fn.
 sheep, 118, 187, goats
 shelter behind women and prisoners, 198, 219
 shepherd is every one, 175
 Shī'ah, the, 44, 45, 78, 94
 Shiḥnah, post of, 136, 137
 ships, 85, 97, 217, 297
 shipwreck, 58
 Shiblī, 19
 Shiḥr city, 56
 shirt, 124
 Sholāpūr, 90fn.
 shoulder blade, 16
 sick, 201, 271
 sick, chronically, 100
 siege, 72, 193, 219, 230
 Ṣiffīn, battle of, 226
 signature, 262, 269
 Simon, Dr. Walter, 129fn.
 Sindh, 53, 109, 110
 Sindān, 109
 Sinkiang, 35
 Sirāf, 109
 Sirājuddīn al-Kināniy, 83
 sister, 203
siyar, 7, 8, 9, 65, international Law
 slave, 75, 101, 114, 152, 172, 195, 203, 235, 238, 251, 253, 272
 slave and quarter, 201
 slave, emancipation of, 128
 slaves compelled to Christianise, 211fn.
 slaves, Muslim treatment of, 210
 slaves of Greek, all non-Greeks, 71
 slaves, postliminium of, 243 fn.
 slavery abolished among Arabs, 210
 slavery restricted among non-Arabs, 210
 smoke, 218, poison gases
 Snouck-Hurgronje, Prof., 27
 solidungular animals, 231
 Solvet, 27
 soothsayer, 57
 South Seas, 88
 sovereign as a citizen, 127
 sovereign subject to law, 81
 sovereignty, 68
 sovereignty of God, 175
 Spain, 64 bis, 76, 116
 Spain, earliest Islamic penetration in, 34
 spears, 10, 211
 sphere of influence, 95
 spiritual leaders, 131
 spoil, 98, booty, salab, *ṣaffy*
 spoils in Jewish law, 72 fn., 230
 spokesman, 55
 Sprenger, 267 fn.
 spy, 134, 193, 222
 spy, different punishments of, 223
 spy, kinds of, 59 fn.
 standards in procession, 235
 state, 1, 2, 5, 73
 state law, 37
 states, diversity of Muslim, 76
 states, kinds of, 11

- stay for naturalisation, length of, 99
 stone-worshippers, 103
 stores, 82
 strategy, 217
 stress, 31
 subject, 11
 subjects of state, 97
 subjects at home, 98
 succession, 93
 Sūdān, 132, 236fn.
 Suez canal, see Khalīj
 ṣūfīs, 44
 Sufyān-ibn-Anas, 219
 Ṣuḥār city, 53, 56
 Suhail, 267, 268 bis
 as-Suhailī, 261
 Sulaimān the merchant, 113
 Sulaimān Nadwī, 19
 Sumerians, the, 46
 summons, 123
sunnaḥ, 15, 18, 21, 24, 66, ḥadīth
 Sunnis, the, 44, 45, 78, 277, 278
 supernumerary prisoners, 205
 supreme court, 22
 surprise in war, 217, 218
 surplus-property tax, 99, zakāt
 surrender, 193, capitulation
 suspension of penal code, partial, 272
 Suwaid-ibn-Muqarrin, 290
 as-Suyūṭī, 155
 sword, 62, 242
 Syria, 35, 46, 47, 49, 54, 118, 127, 131, 142, 232, 253, 259, 264, 267, 278 bis, 280, app. A.
ta'āmūl, 32, custom
 at-Ṭabarānī, 125
 at-Ṭabarī, 177
 Ṭabaristān, 290
tabarra', see public despise
 Tabūk, 253
 tacit acceptance, 270
 tactics, 217
 at-Taftāzānī, 23
 (banū) Taghlib, Taghlibites, the, 59fn., 214fn., 279, 280
 Ṭā'if, 56, 125, 134, 267, 272fn.
 Taimā', 258
tanfīl, 240
taqwā as against *fatwā*, 246
 tariff, 135
 Ṭāriq, 35
tawriyah, 216, ruse
 tax, 101, 112, 170, 179, 188, 229, 231
 tax, import, 84, 86
 taxes on foreigners, 122
 taxable minimum, 135
 Ṭayites, the, 53, 131
 Teherān, 30
 telegrams, 190
 Telengānah, 95
 Templars, the, 64
 temple violated, 110
 terminology, 7
 territorial water, 85, 97, ḥarīm
 territory, 11, 80, 81, 82, 84, 91, 104, 117, 120
 territory, kinds of, 91, 117
 territory, treatment of conquered, 229
 testaments of prisoners, 205
 Teutonic order, 64
 Tha'labah, 279
 theft, 104, 110
 thief made slave, 104fn.
 Theocracy, 74, 180
 Theodimir, 91
 threat of breach of treaty, 182
 Thumāmah-ibn-Uthāl, 186, 252
 Tigris, 46, 85, 86
 Tīkrit, 137
 time-limit for treaties, 261
 time-limit of peace, 259ff.
 Tippu Sultān, 90fn.
 at-Tirmidhī, 220
 tithes, 53, 112, 133, 135
 title, 92, 93, 94, Reviver
 toleration, 113
 toleration of custom & usage,

- Torah, the, 130
 tourists, 201
 trade with enemy, 187, 189, 249, 253
 traders, 54, 134, 169, 193fn., 197, 203, 251
 tradition, 18, hadīth, sunnah
 tradition, compilation of, 19
 tradition, first collection of, 19fn.
 traffic, 86
 traitor, 105
 transit, 270
 translation of Arabic works, 64
 transport, 82
 travel, 103
 treachery, 114, 182, 196, 248, 280
 treasury, state, 101
 treaty, 1, 2, 5, 15, 31, 47, 52, 82, 95, 121, 122, 131, 286
 treaty, breach of, 182
 treaty, deposit of, 55
 treaty, earliest recorded, 47
 treaties of enemy, 189
 treaties respected by Muslims, 73
 treaties, universal, 31fn.
 trees, 196, 233
 tribe, 1, 39, 42, 50, 52
 tributary state, 91
 tribute, 71, 171, 182, 259
 truce, 59, 270
 truce, flag of, 226
 truce, kinds of, 254
 truce of God, 52, 58
 trust, 74, 80, 81, 187, 188, 228, 250
 trusts of enemy, 187
 trusteeship, 81
 Tughlaq, 93fn.
 turban, 202
 Turkey & Turks, 63, 64, 70, 84, 90fn. 131, 148, 254
 Turkistān, 35, 49
 two-rulers' theory, 69fn.
 tyranny, 174
 Ubaīy-ibn-Salūl, 141
 Uḥud, battle of, 244, 257, 271, 274
 Ukaidir, 154, 231
 'Ukāz, fair of, 53, 56 bis, 57
 ultimatum, 181, 182
 'Ulwah, 291
 Umayyads, the, 21, 44, 64, 70, 76, 122
 Umayyah-ibn-Khalaf, 185 passim, 186
 'Umān, 51, 53, 56 bis, 94, 138, 257, 265
 'Umar, caliph, 17, 22, 35, 44, 55, 78, 81fn., 86, 99fn., 100, 101, 109, 115 bis, 122, 126 tris, 127, 131, 136, 138 bis, 179, 188, 205, 210, 214, 220, 229, 231, 232, 233, 241, 268, 271
 'Umar II, caliph, 90, 211
 'umrah pilgrimage, 185, 267
 'umumul-bālawā, 32
 Unais, 134fn.
 uniform, 59, 224
 uniform light brown, 225fn.
 uniform of complainant, 112
 unilateral declaration, 32, 71
 unity, 40
 unity of God, 181
 universal polity, 73
 universities, Arab, 64
 unrecited revelation, 16fn.
 'urf, 32, custom
 'Urwah, 58fn.
 usage, 5, 15, 32, 34, 36, custom
 Usāmah, app. A.
 usurpation, 104
 usury, 26
 'Uthmān, caliph, 18 bis, 44, 102, 126, 142, 168, 291
 veils for women, 245
 vendetta, 58fn.
 vicegerency of God, 73
 violation of neutrality, 283
 Vitoria, the jurist, 64, 110
 vivisection, 110
 volunteer force, 239
 volunteer ladies, 244

- Walker, Prof., 28, 64
 Wādī al-Qurā, 231
 al-Wāqidiy, 8, Muḥammad-ibn-
 'Umar
 war, 52, 59, 89, 149
 war a sickness, 150
 war, authorised grounds for, 78
 war, defensive, 154, 155, 181
 war, definition of, 180
 war, effect of outbreak of, 121
 war, end of, 257
 war, idealistic, 156
 war, lawful, 153
 war, preventive, 182
 war, punitive, 156, 181, 182
 war, retaliatory, 182
 war, sympathetic, 155
 wargear, 252, weapon
 warkit, 154
 warlike expedition, 294fn.
 Wāsiṭ, 137
 watchword, 219, 224, 274
 water, 48, 80, 83, 220, 231
 water cut off, 198
 water, drinking, 245
 water of enemy spoiled, 217fn.
 water-carrier, 244
 waterways, 85, 86
 wealth, 51
 weapon, 172, 251, 252
 weapons, lawful, 217
 well, 85
 Wellhausen, 56fn.
 West, people of, 53
 Westerners, 282, Rūmis
 Western Ghāts, 122fn.
 whip, 123, 124, 125
 wickedness, 196
 wife, 203, 250
 wife of ruler, 138
 wife's nationality, 103
 will, 121, testaments
 will of God, 73
 will of people, 73
 will of prisoners, 205, 207, testa-
 ment
 will of Prophet, 138, 231
 will of state, 2, 14
 witness, 111, 268
 Woolsey, 63
 worldly life, 13
 Word of God, 15
 women, 72, 152, 172, 184, 194, 195,
 201, 269
 women and sea warfare, 245
 women apostate, 162
 women fighters, 244
 women in Muslim army, 244
 women prisoners, Muslim, 114
 women rebel, 173
 women's property' customs-free, 122
 women's share of booty, 240
 women, when to kill, 215
 world-order, Islamic notion of, 72
 world war II, 294fn.
 wounded, 172, 244, 245, 271
 wounding, 215
 writing down of treaty, 261
 Wüstenfeld, 226fn.
 Yamāmah, 94fn., 186, 252 bis, 266
 Yaman, 51, 52, 54, 55, 56, bis, 130,
 253, 262, 265, 266, 267, 278, 280,
 287
 Yanbū', 141, 259
 al-Ya'qūbiy, 58
 Yāshkur, the, 279
 Yazīd-ibn-Abī-Sufyān, app. A.
 young lady volunteers, 244, 245
 Zaid-ibn-'Alīy, 8fn., 24
 Zaid-ibn-Sa'nah, 125
 zakāt, 99, 101, 156, 231, 260, surplus
 property tax
 zakāt spent on non-Muslims, 101
 Ziyād-ibn-Abī-Sufyān 272fn.